Star Wars and Philosophy

by Kevin S. Decker, Jason T. Eberl, William Irwin

The Force Is with You... but You're Not a Jedi Yet

Now this may shock you, but there's an arcane, little-known quotation,

one rich in meaning, that appears in every Star Wars movie: "I've got a bad

feeling about this." In each episode of George Lucas's "space opera," one

of the main characters expresses this basic existential anxiety. 1 It's an

intuitive response to an undefined problem. Yet it has its root in the

essentially philosophical thought that our relationship to the world is one

of questioning. Questions sometimes emerge from wonder, sometimes from

doubt. We stare up at the heavens, much as Luke did on Tatooine, and wonder

about the extent of the universe, its origin, and its meaning. In a crisis

of faith, much as Luke had when confronted by his parentage on Cloud City,

we may doubt many of our firmly-held beliefs and preconceptions. We search

our inner selves, as did Leia when Han was being lowered into the carbon-

freezing chamber, and wonder about what it means to love or be virtuous.

Sharing Han's skeptical worldly point of view, we may doubt that we have

any existence as a mind or soul after our bodily processes are nullified by

death. We comb through our junkyard, much as Watto constantly does, and

wonder whether there are formulas describing the variances of the value

character of the products of labor.

But philosophy doesn't have a monopoly on wonder or doubt. You could

be in a state of wonder reflecting upon the birth of your twin children, or

while viewing the new piece of art on your favorite Hutt's wall. Similarly,

you could be in doubt whether the modifications to your podracer are

sufficient to allow you to be competitive in the Boonta Eve Race. In these

cases, no philosophical questioning needs to occur. Philosophy begins with

wonder but leads to thinking. The need to think things through, to change

our mind and our environment, arises only because we get into sticky

situations. Simple problems disclose their solutions almost immediately,

like young Anakin's uncanny ability to fix machines. More difficult ones

require us to search among alternatives for a solution: Should Obi-Wan tell

Luke the truth about his father from the start or wait until he matures?

Should Qui-Gon use Jedi "mind tricks" on Boss Nass to secure transport from

the Gungan city? Philosophical problems are often distinguished by the fact

that the problem itself is unclear-we need to settle certain things about

the world and ourselves, sometimes at the deepest levels, before we can

"blow this thing and go home."

Now Star Wars doesn't wear its philosophy on its sleeve-it doesn't

make clever allusions to Alice in Wonderland or the Kabbalah in an effort

to jump-start the mind of the average viewer. Although these movies are

primarily vehicles for action scenes and fantasy themes, they still involve

characters reaching out and deeply within to solve problems that are

significantly larger than themselves. In Star Wars, conflict is a constant, $\ensuremath{\mathsf{C}}$

but it's not fighting in the "wars" of the title that spurs the development

of the main characters' personalities-after all, "wars not make one great."

Instead, it's the struggle to understand and overcome deep problems of

identity, truth, freedom, and the tragic side of life that defines the

rise, fall, and rise again of the Skywalker family and the impact they have

on allies and enemies alike.

Essentially, the Star Wars movies tell a simple story of tragedy,

courage, and redemption. But under this simple guise the ageless questions

of philosophy-many of which are examined in this book-derive new meaning

when held against the background of its plot, colorful situations, and

memorable characters. For example:

- * Are the virtues good because they are appreciated by the Jedi, or are they appreciated by the Jedi because they are good? (Plato)
- * Is Yoda a Jedi Master so great that a greater one can't be conceived of? (Anselm)
- * Can Anakin commit himself as a chaste, unattached Jedi Knight, but just not yet? (Augustine)
- * As absolute ruler of a galaxy-wide Empire, is it better to be loved or feared? (Machiavelli)
 - * Am I a mind, a body, or an overweight glob of grease? (Descartes)
- * How do we know the sun will rise on Alderaan tomorrow, even if it has done so every day since the beginning of time? (Hume)3
- * If Vader looks into the abyss, doesn't the abyss also look back into him? (Nietzsche)
 - * Is hell other Sith lords? (Sartre)
 - * Who's scruffy-lookin'? (Solo)

Here, you'll encounter thoughtful and lively discussion of these

questions, but not hard-and-fast answers to them-don't blame us, some of

these questions have gone unanswered for over two thousand years! Judith

Barad takes on the most ancient of these while exploring the virtues of the

Jedi Order. Yoda is conceived of as a both a great Jedi Master and a wise

Stoic sage by William Stephens. For Chris Brown, Anakin's fall

redemption may be unavoidable if evil is needed for good to exist. Emperor

Palpatine, in the eyes of Kevin Decker, is the galaxy's most masterful

practitioner of Machiavellian political arts. Robert Arp finds
Descartes's

question about mind and body just as intriguing to ask about C-3PO and R2-

 $\ensuremath{\text{D2}}$ as of ourselves, and Jerome Donnelly concurs that droids may be more

"human" than the humans in Star Wars. While we know the answer to the

Alderaan question, Jan-Erik Jones finds similar cocktail party discussions

about expected cause-and-effect relationships still unresolved on our

planet-just what makes gravity work anyway? Of course, Darth Vader's entire

life is spent looking into the metaphorical abyss of darkness and evil, and

occasionally into the literal abyss of space station reactor shafts; what

this says about his moral character and capacity for redemption is the

fascination of many in what follows. And while Sartre's question regards

three strangers trapped in a room with "no exit" for all eternity, Brian

Cameron notes that it takes only two Sith to dance the pas de deux Hegelian

"dialectic" that leads to mutual self-destruction.

These are by no means the only philosophical questions raised and $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +$

addressed by our Force-sensitive contributors. Using nature and other

sentient beings merely as means to one's own ends, valuing deception as a

tool to bring about the greatest good, avoiding the dehumanizing influence

of technology, finding the balance between love and duty, taking a leap of

faith, and achieving the enlightened mind of "no mind" are also defining

philosophical issues in Lucas's galaxy and our own.

This book came together with Socrates's thought that wisdom, for

humans as well as R5 droids, begins when we discover our own "bad

motivators." The preceding questions and the issues they raise are deep and

challenging, but thinking about them can be rewarding and even fun to those

whose thinking is slightly more precise than a stormtrooper's aim. Consider

this book a "Kessel Run" for your brain, and enjoy-you get bragging rights if you read the whole book in less than five parsecs!

Part I

"May The Force Be with You"

The Philosophical Messages of Star Wars

"You Cannot Escape Your Destiny" (Or Can You?): Freedom and Predestination in the Skywalker Family

IASON T. EBERL

In The Phantom Menace, Jedi Master Qui-Gon Jinn brings a nine-year-old

boy, recently released from slavery and separated from his mother, before

the Jedi Council to ask that he be trained in the ways of the $\mbox{Force.}$ When

the Council refuses to permit the boy's training, Qui-Gon declares, "He is

the Chosen One. You must see that." To which Master Yoda replies, "Clouded

this boy's future is."

The boy is, of course, Anakin Skywalker-the future Darth Vader-and his

being "the Chosen One" is based on a Jedi prophecy that refers to Anakin

"bringing balance to the Force." Approximately thirty-five years {Star Wars

time) after this exchange, Anakin's son, Luke, has nearly completed his

training to become a Jedi Knight. After the deaths of $\,$ Obi-Wan $\,$ Kenobi and

Yoda, Luke will be the "last of the Jedi" and the "last hope" for the

galaxy to be saved from the tyrannical power of the Dark Side of the Force

exercised by Darth Vader and Emperor Palpatine. Yoda tells Luke, however,

that he will be a Jedi only if he faces Darth Vader in battle a second time

(their first battle having ended badly for Luke and his extremities!) Luke

balks at the idea of killing his own father. But the apparition of $\mbox{\sc Obi-Wan}$

responds, "You cannot escape your destiny. You must face Darth Vader again.

"

These scenes raise particularly interesting philosophical questions

concerning freedom and moral responsibility. $\!\!1\!$ What does it mean for Anakin

to be the Chosen One? Is it possible for him to fail to fulfill the

prophecy? Is Anakin predestined to fall to the Dark Side and $\,$ become Darth

Vader? Must Luke unavoidably shoulder the burden of saving the galaxy? Or,

does Anakin choose to ally himself with the Emperor? Could Luke have chosen

to remain on Tatooine and live out his life tending his uncle's moisture

farm instead of going with Obi-Wan?

"Clouded This Boy's Future Is"

Anakin Skywalker's destiny seems to have been set for him since before

he was even born. "Who was his father?" asks Qui-Gon after sensing Anakin's

incredible Force-potential. His mother, Shmi, replies, "There was no

father. 1 gave birth to him, I raised him... I can't explain how it.

happened." The realization then dawns on Qui-Gon that $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1$

Chosen One of Jedi prophecy. Qui-Gon is a true believer in Anakin's destiny

from that moment on and, with his dying breath, insists that Obi-Wan train

Anakin to become a Jedi Knight. Qui-Gon's belief in Anakin, however, is

just that-a belief-and Master Yoda points out the uncertainty of Anakin's future.

For us, the future is also clouded. Typically-despite some people's

belief in crystal balls or Tarot cards-we don't have visionary insights

into what's to come. Even gifted Jedi don't have certainty about future

events. When Luke has a vision of Han and Leia suffering on Bespin, he

Yoda, "Will they die?" If any Jedi is able to see clearly into the future,

it should be the oldest, wisest, greenest, and most powerful of all of

them. But even Yoda can only reply, "Difficult to see. Always in motion is

the future." Perhaps it's this lack of certainty about our knowledge of the

future that allows us to freely choose what actions we'll take to determine

the future for ourselves-as Luke courageously, but perhaps also foolishly,

chooses to end his training early and leave Dagobah to help his friends. Of

course, we typically don't equate ignorance with freedom. Suffering under

the delusion that you're free because you don't know your own future isn't

nearly as good as actually having an indeterminate future-a future not

already set in stone.

But at least one individual in the Star Wars galaxy seems to have had

a pretty clear idea of what lay ahead in the future: whoever wrote the Jedi

prophecy that Anakin fulfilled when he, as Vader, killed Emperor Palpatine

in Return of the Jedi. This visionary, at least in this case, had a "God's-

eye view" of the future and it's this perspective that raises questions

regarding Anakin's freedom as well as our own.

In our galaxy, many religious believers-particularly those in the

Jewish, Christian, and Islamic traditions-conceive of God as omniscient

(all-knowing) and understand God 's infinite knowledge to include infallible

knowledge of the future.2 If God knows from all eternity that I would be

writing this chapter right now, it might seem that there's no way it could

be false that I'm now writing this chapter. When I was sitting in my Lay- $7.4\,$

Boy chair about thirty minutes ago wondering whether I should work on $\ensuremath{\mathsf{my}}$

chapter or watch Attack of the Clones on DVD with $\ \mbox{my} \ \ 5.1 \ \ \mbox{surround}$ sound

system on full-blast (because my wife is out with her girlfriends tonight),

God already knew what I was going to choose and, since God can't be wrong,

it seems I couldn't have chosen to watch my DVD instead of working on my

that

To approach this question, we have to understand a little more about God's nature. Both St. Augustine (354-430) and St. Thomas Aquinas (1225 -1274) - two very influential Christian philosophers of the Middle Agesreason that there isn't much we can definitively say about God's nature, since is far beyond our comprehension. Nevertheless, there are certain things they're sure that God is not. For example, both hold that God is not time." Aguinas relies on Aristotle, who argued that time is the measure motion. There can be no time if there's no motion; and there can be motion if there is no universe with things in it that are in motion-just the Force requires living things in order to exist. God, though, must outside the universe, because God created the universe. This also means

God could exist even if no universe existed. Since time requires the existence of a universe that contains things in motion, and God could exist without such a universe existing, God must exist outside of time-God is eternal.

What would eternal existence-living outside of time-be like?
We experience the passage of time in a linear fashion-one moment passes to the next, which passes to the next, and so on. When Han Solo makes the Kessel
Run in less than five parsecs (a measure of distance, not time), he must travel the first parsec, before he can travel the second, before he can travel the third, and so on. This, of course, requires that he travel for one period of time, before he can travel for a second period of time, before he can travel for a second period of time, before he can travel for a third... you get the idea. This is the nature of time from our perspective. From the eternal perspective, though, every

moment in time occurs at once. Imagine seeing every frame of all \sin

Wars films at the same instant, not one after another-like scenes on the

page of a comic book; you would see Han shooting Greedo and being frozen in

carbonite at the same time!

If someone could see from this eternal perspective, he would know the future, because, from this perspective, the past, present, and future are all equally present to the observer. For us linear observers, the future doesn't exist. Neither does the past, which we simply recollect. We can perceive only the present. Aquinas writes:

God knows future events still undetermined... Now God knows such

events not only in their causes but also as actual happenings. Though they

happen one after another, God's knowledge of them happening is not itself

successive (like ours), but instantaneously whole. His knowledge, like his

existence, is measured by eternity, which in one and the same instant

encompasses all time; so his gaze is eternally focused on everything in

time as on something present and known to him with certainty, $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1$

it is future and undetermined in relation to its cause.

Does the eternal observer's knowledge of the linear observer's future $\begin{tabular}{ll} \hline \end{tabular}$

determine that future? Assuming that the eternal observer can't be mistaken

in his perceptions, it would seem that it does. How can I change the future

that is already known by someone who can't be wrong about it? Assuming that

the prophecy is true and Anakin is indeed the Chosen One, it seems he can't

avoid bringing balance to the Force. He couldn't freely choose not to kill

the Emperor.

Some philosophers would answer that Anakin does not freely choose to

throw the Emperor down the second Death Star's reactor shaft. They assume

that the eternal observer's knowledge determines his fate; whatever has

been correctly prophesied must happen. But what determines the eternal

observer's knowledge? What causes the prophecy of the Chosen One to exist

in the first place?

When Anakin, as Vader, is watching his son being tortured and slowly

killed by the Emperor, it's evident that he's wrestling with a moral choice

between devotion to his master and love for his son. John Williams's $\,$

dramatic score reaches a dark crescendo as it seems all hope for saving the

galaxy from tyranny is about to be lost. But then the music suddenly shifts

to the triumphal "Force Theme" as Anakin makes his choice and destroys the

Emperor-thereby saving his son, restoring freedom to the galaxy, and

bringing the Force back into balance - all at the cost of his own life. It

may be that Anakin's choice determines the eternal observer's knowledge of

what he'll do, not the other way around. If Anakin hadn't chosen to destroy

the Emperor and thus fulfill the prophecy, the prophecy might not have

existed in the first place. The prophecy that seems to determine the

ultimate course of Anakin's future may itself be determined by the ultimate

course of Anakin's future that results from his choices.

This possibility implies "counter-temporal causality"-that, in this

case, a future choice causes past knowledge, whereas we typically think of

past events causing future events. But, from the eternal observer's

perspective, Anakin's choice and the knowledge expressed in the prophecy

are both present. So this isn't a case of counter-temporal causality.

Anakin's choice causes the eternal observer's knowledge in the same way

that my pushing a ball across the floor causes the ball's movement - both

events occur simultaneously.

Augustine compares the eternal observer's knowledge of the future to our mundane knowledge of the past:

Why cannot [God] justly punish what He does not force to be done, even

though He foreknows it? Your recollection of events in the past does not

compel them to occur. In the same way, God 's foreknowledge of future events

does not compel them to take place. As you remember certain things that you

have done and yet have not done all the things that you $\mbox{remember,}$ so \mbox{God}

foreknows all the things of which He Himself is the Cause, and yet He is

not the Cause of all that He foreknows.

This is not the only way of responding to the problem of the eternal

observer. We've been assuming that the eternal observer-personified by the

classical theistic notion of God - has infallible knowledge of the future.

But maybe there are no such eternal observers and there's no time beyond

the present moment that we linear observers are currently experiencing.

When Yoda asserts, "Always in motion is the future," he may not have been

speaking merely from a linear perspective, but reflecting a metaphysical

fact: The future isn't set, because it doesn't yet exist. When it does, we

call it "the present," so nothing called "the future" really exists.

"Everything Is Proceeding as I Had Foreseen"

Even if the future doesn't exist until it becomes the present, a powerful person in the present may attempt to determine what the

will be. In The Phantom Menace, Darth Sidious puts into motion a plan

take revenge on the Jedi and gain tyrannical control of the galaxy. In

Revenge of the Sith, the plan comes to fruition as Sidious becomes the

Galactic Emperor and, in Return of the Jedi, he prepares to sweep away for

good the Rebellion that threatens his Empire and convert the $\;$ last $\;$ of the

Jedi to the Dark Side of the Force. After arriving on the second Death Star

and seeing his vast Imperial army and fleet amassed, he boasts to Vader,

"Everything is proceeding as I had foreseen" [insert evil cackle]. But in

The Empire Strikes Back, he warns

 $\label{thm:could} \mbox{Vader that Luke "could destroy us." Vader shares this prediction with }$

Luke when he first tries to persuade him to the Dark Side, but obviously

has slightly different designs, saying, "You could destroy the. Emperor. He

has foreseen this. It is your destiny."

We all know how the story goes. Things don't proceed as the $\operatorname{\sc Emperor}$

had "foreseen," otherwise he would not have laughed in such a gleefully

wicked manner after boasting to Vader. The Emperor tries his best to act as

the grand "puppet-master" pulling everyone's strings. But people aren't

marionettes and the Emperor appears truly shocked and chagrined when Luke,

striking down his father in rage, then throws away his lightsaber and

declares that he'll never turn to the Dark Side: "You've failed, Your

Highness. I am a Jedi, like my father before me." Caught off-guard by this

sudden assertion of free choice, the Emperor can only declare solemnly: $\hbox{\tt "So}$

be it, Jedi."

For some religious believers, God can pull certain strings in the

world to make it turn out as he wills. God designed the universe with

the physical causal laws that we live by everyday, such as gravity,

inertia, centrifugal force, the fact that all "lite" beers are tasteless,

and so forth. But does God also pull the strings of human will? Does he,

for example, truly "harden hearts" as the Bible says he did to the Egyptian $\ \ \,$

Pharaoh (Exodus 4:21)? This is an important question for religious

believers who also think that human beings are morally responsible for their actions: Do good and you go to Heaven, do evil and you go to Hell. If God hardened Pharaoh's heart so that he wouldn't let the Israelites leave Egypt, does he deserve his punishment when God drowns the Egyptians in the

Red Sea?

For religious philosophers, such as Augustine and Aquinas, God may infuse "grace" into the minds and hearts of those who invite it, and deny it to those who refuse it. And this grace may influence a person's will, usually toward goodness. But the reception of grace requires the compliance of the person's own will. The only way to receive God's grace is not reject it, and someone can avoid being infused with grace by willing against it. Thus, by creating human beings with freedom of will, God limits his own power to control our lives; God can pull only (hose strings in will that we let him-though he can still pull the strings of everything around us.

In this sense, God has about as much power over us as the Emperor does over Luke and Vader. The Emperor believes he has a power over others' that he can't have, because, although he's a powerful Sith Lord, ultimately a limited, mortal being. God, on the other hand, is omnipotent (all-powerful) and thus could have exercised total control over everything he has created-including us! For example, God could have designed us mindless automatons just as the Kaminoans modified the genetic structure the Republic's clone troopers to make them "less independent" and "totally obedient, taking any order without question." But God chose to create with freedom of will and thereby elected to limit his own power to pull strings. Though omnipotent, even God can't control us because of the way he

created us. This allows us to be responsible for our moral choices and merit whatever reward or punishment we deserve.

But even if there might be no future to be determined and also no infallible cosmic puppet-master, we haven't escaped the possibility of fate. It could be that the mere truth of what philosophers call "future-contingent propositions"-statements about the future-requires that events unfold in a determinate fashion. Various views of fate actually predate much of the religious philosophy we've been talking about-the ancient Sumerian culture, the Homeric epics (Iliad and Odyssey), and the best Greek tragedies all concern themselves with fate.

In his De interpretations, Aristotle raises the issue of fate by noting that one can truthfully say at any time that "Either there will be a sea-battle tomorrow or there won't be." Now this is about as uninformative as a statement can get-imagine a Rebel strategist telling Admiral Ackbar and Lando Calrissian "Either you will destroy the Death Star when you reach Endor or you won't." Nevertheless, Aristotle continues, if someone says "There will be a sea-battle tomorrow," she may be right, for there may indeed be a sea-battle tomorrow. But she may also be wrong, for there may not be a sea-battle tomorrow.

Let's say there is a sea-battle and the person who says so is right even though she lacks the benefit of omniscient foreknowledge. The fact that the proposition "There will be a sea-battle tomorrow" is true today seems to determine that there will indeed be a sea-battle tomorrow. How could there not be unless the proposition is false? If it was true at the time of The Phantom Menace that Obi-Wan would later die at Vader's hands in

A New Hope, then Obi-Wan must die at that time. But Obi-Wan ceased fighting, held up his lightsaber, and allowed Vader to kill him an apparently free, but mysterious, action.

One way to answer this apparent fatalism is by noting once again where the chain of causality starts. If the proposition "Obi-Wan will die at Vader's hands" is true thirty-plus years before it happens, it doesn't necessarily cause Obi-Wan's death. Rather, Obi-Wan's choice to allow Vader to cut him down is what makes the proposition true and also makes the proposition "Obi-Wan will live to see the Emperor defeated" false. Another way is to deny, as Aristotle does, that future-contingent propositions have any truth value whatsoever-they are neither true nor false when they are spoken. Such propositions become true or false only when the event to which they refer occurs or fails to occur.

"He's Got to Follow His Own Path"

But what if Obi-Wan did not freely choose to allow Vader to kill him, because he had no real alternatives? Many philosophers - typically referred to as "libertarians"6-would agree that Obi-Wan isn't free if he can't choose to do otherwise. Vader seems to suffer from this lack of freedom in a sympathetic scene from Return of the Jedi when, after Luke makes a valiant effort to reach the goodness he still senses in his father, Vader declares, "You don't know the power of the Dark Side, I must obey my master... It is too late for me, son."

And, indeed, the Force seems to work this way. Qui-Gon argues, with reference to Anakin, "Finding him was the will of the Force, I have no doubt of that," and he later explains to Anakin how the midi-chlorians present in all life-forms are "constantly speaking to us, telling us the

will of the Force." If the "will of the Force" determines the fate of the universe, perhaps even directly intervening to cause Anakin's conception as Qui-Gon surmises, then it doesn't seem as if Anakin or any other being subject to the Force has alternative possibilities of action. They must act as the Force wills.

If line, then the only possibly free beings in the Star Wars galaxy are those who don't subject themselves to the will of the Force? - the paradigmatic example being Han Solo, who emphatically asserts, "No mystical energy field controls my destiny." Han has lived his entire life as a "free spirit," wandering the galaxy carrying spice shipments for Jabba the Hutt, breaking speed records in the Millennium Falcon, and trying to "avoid any Imperial entanglements."

Han exercises his freedom of choice most assertively when he decides to take his reward for rescuing Princess Leia and leave the Rebel Alliance behind instead of helping them destroy the Death Star. Luke confronts him, but Han's will to leave is strong and he simply gives Luke a half-hearted "May the Force be with you." Luke's less naive sister, Leia, is equally disappointed with Han's decision, but understands that there's nothing they can do to stop him: "He's got to follow his own path. No one can choose it for him." We know, of course, that Han eventually changes his mind and chooses to come to Luke's rescue at the last instant, freeing him to use the Force to destroy the Death Star.

Han, unlike Anakin and Luke, appears to have alternative possibilities in determining his own future, which most libertarian philosophers take to be fundamental to the definition of "freedom." Enlightenmentera philosopher John Locke (1632-1704), however, notes that freedom may not

require having alternative possibilities:

Suppose a Man be carried, whilst fast asleep, into a Room, where is a Person he longs to see and speak with-, and be there locked fast in, beyond His Power to get out: he awakes, and is glad to find himself in so desirable Company, which he stays willingly in, i.e. prefers his stay to going away. I ask, Is not this stay voluntary? I think, no Body will doubt it: and yet being locked fast in, 'tis evident he is not at liberty not to stay, he has not freedom to be gone.

What makes the person in Locke's story free, despite having no alternative to staying in the locked room, is that he desires to be there.

He perceives the pleasurable company he's in and desires to stay in that pleasurable company. So long as he desires to stay in the room, his remaining there is freely chosen, so says Locke. If, however, he decides to leave the room and finds the door locked, then his remaining in the room has been forced upon him against his will to leave and he's thereby not free. Freedom, then, may ultimately depend upon a person's will - whether he desires to do one action or another, whether he desires to do good or evil-and his ability to do whatever he wills.

In demonstrating why human beings act freely when they commit evil, and aren't caused to do so by God's will or eternal foreknowledge, Augustine contends that desire is the foundation of all evil that results from a person's disordered will: "Each evil man is the cause of his own evildoing."? Augustine describes a person as having an "inordinate desire" when he focuses too much on "temporal" things. Good persons live by "turning their love away from those things which cannot be possessed without the risk of losing them." While evil persons "try (o remove

obstacles so that they may safely rest in their enjoyment of these things,

and so live a life full of evil and crime, which would be better named

death."10 This description certainly fits Anakin, who is unable to turn his

love away from his mother and from Padme, both of whom he loses. When he

expresses his frustration at being unable to save his mother from the Sand

People, he vows to become "the most powerful Jedi ever" and to "learn to

stop people from dying." George Lucas, the man who knows the most about

Anakin's psychology, notes:

The problem that Anakin has in this whole thing is he has a hard time

letting go of things. As he sought more and more power to try to change

people's fate so that they're the way he wants them, that greed goes from

trying to save the one you love to realizing you can control the universe.

It is Anakin's desire to control things that are ultimately outside of

his control, in defiance of the natural order of the universe established

by the will of the Force, which leads to his moral downfall. And this

desire stems from Anakin himself: "What each man chooses to pursue and to

love lies in his own will."12 On this view, it doesn't matter whether

Anakin has the possibility to act as he wills. Even if something prevents

Anakin from, say, marrying Padme on Naboo-imagine that their ship blows up

on the way there-he has already freely willed to violate the Jedi Code and

is morally responsible for that volition. So, despite the appearance that

Anakin has no alternative possibilities with regards to being the Chosen

One and destroying the Emperor, he's nonetheless free in his choosing to

ally himself with the Dark Side, because that choice stems from his own

will, his own inordinate desires.

[&]quot;This One a Long Time Have I Watched"

Luke, like his father, carries the burden of future expectation on his shoulders. While Anakin is the child of prophecy, Luke is both the new

and

last hope for restoring freedom to the $\ensuremath{\,\mathrm{galaxy.}}$ But to restore $\ensuremath{\,\mathrm{galactic}}$

freedom, Luke must first exercise his individual freedom. As he discovers

in the cave on Dagobah, Luke has the same potential to allow inordinate

desire to control his will and turn him to the Dark Side. Both Vader and

the Emperor attempt to tap into Luke's desire to destroy, and each try to

turn that desire to their own advantage. But, ultimately, only Luke can

give into that inordinate desire; only he can turn his own will to the Dark

Side: "After all, what cause of the will could there be, except the will $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right)$

itself?"

And while both Yoda and Obi-Wan have put great faith in Luke from the

time he was born, even they can only watch Luke's life unfold and help

train him as a Jedi. Despite their good intentions, neither has the power

to bend Luke's will, as we see in The Empire Strikes Back when they plead

with him not to leave Dagobah before his training is completed. Luke is

much like his father, as he's inclined to allow inordinate desire to

control his will. But he's also like Han Solo, because he's not wholly

subject to the will of the Force. When he asks $\operatorname{Obi-Wan}$ if the Force

your commands." In a deleted scene from Attack of the Clones, Mace Windu

counsels Obi-Wan regarding Anakin, "You must have faith that he will take

the right path." Anakin has control over his own destiny and even the Jedi

Masters are powerless to prevent what he wills. Unfortunately, $\mbox{\tt Anakin}$

doesn't take the right path, but his son does despite similar obstacles.

In our own lives it's important to ask which "forces" are attempting

to bend our will. What desires have the potential to become "inordinate"

and be allowed to take over our will? And we must also be conscious of the

control we have over our own will and desires. Even if there's an eternal

observer keeping watch over us or a puppetmaster pulling the universe's

strings around us, we can pull our own strings and thereby $\mbox{determine}$ what

the eternal observer knows and limit what the puppet-master can accomplish.

We are radically free and thus responsible for what we choose to will. And

since my wife is still out with "the girls," I think I'll exercise my $\mbox{\ }$

radical freedom to watch Attack of the Clones and wake up the neighbors,

comfortable in the knowledge that Que sera, sera... Whatever will he, will he.,

Stoicism in the Stars: Yoda, the Emperor, and the Force

WILLIAM O. STEPHENS

Stoicism is the ancient Greek philosophy that originated in the third

century b.c.e. in the "Stoa" or porch where Zeno of Citium taught in

Athens. Stoicism counsels acting virtuously and without emotional

disturbance while living in harmony with fate. But why care about $\mathsf{Stoicism}$

today? For one thing, Zeno's followers, the Stoics, exerted enormous

influence on Roman culture, Christianity, and Western philosophy for

centuries. Today, Stoicism continues to receive a lot of attention from

philosophers,1 novelists,2 soldier-politicians,3 and psychologists.4 This

is because Stoic ideas provide an effective strategy for addressing

conflicts and kinds of adversity faced in the real world. Star Wars fans

too can benefit from some Stoicism.

Understanding the Force is key to understanding the Star Wars universe since how the Force is conceived, used, or ignored by the characters goes a

long way to determining their identities, allegiances, and goals. What is

it that makes the Force and the discipline necessary to master it so

compelling to figures like Luke, Yoda, and the Emperor? Stoicism helps

reveal both the logic of the Light Side of the Force and the logic of the

Dark Side. How Yoda and the Emperor understand the Force radically shapes

their moral characters and drives their actions. A brief study of ${\tt Stoicism}$

will allow us to understand why Yoda and the ${\tt Emperor}$ can each be so devoted

to contrary sides of the Force.

Appearance versus Reality: Jester or Jedi Master?

When Luke and Artoo arrive on Dagobah in The Empire Strikes Back, Luke

instinctively brandishes his blaster when they are startled by an

unthreatening, wizened, olive-skinned dwarf clad in rags. "Away put your

weapon! I mean you no harm," the cringing dwarf pleads. With his quirky

sense of humor, Yoda remarks that Luke has found someone, though Luke

doesn't realize he has found the very Jedi master he is looking for. But

while this puny goblin assures Luke he can help him, Luke doubts him. Luke

explains that he is looking for a great warrior. Laughing, Yoda responds:

"Wars not make one great." This remark is ironic since "yoda" is Sanskrit

for "warrior." Yoda cer-lainly looks nothing like a great warrior.

Yoda then acts like a silly beggar. He finds, nibbles on, and discards $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

an untasty snack bar in Luke's supplies. When he fights over a tiny power

lamp with Artoo, Yoda looks even sillier. Luke is impatient to find the

Jedi master, but the goofy goblin wants to eat first. So our first

impression of Yoda is of a solitary, harmless, vulnerable, shabby, hungry

geezer with a quirky sense of hunor and an odd manner of speech. Yoda's

appearance inspires no awe at all.

Contrast this image with the first appearance of Darth Vader in I $_{\mbox{\footnotesize New}}$

Hope and the Emperor in Return of the Jedi. Moments after the first wave of

stormtroopers, all clad in white armor, have blasted their way onto

Princess Leia's ship, a tall, dominating figure in a face-concealing

helmet, cape, and armor, all in black, strides confidently amidst the

victorious stormtroopers. hee issues commands in a deep, rasping,

mechanical, monotone voice. Vader appears menacing, invulnerable, and

powerful, sur-rounded by his minions, who instantly obey his every com-

mand. This dark, imposing man machine inspires awe. hee is obviously a

great warrior and a very powerful leader. As the saga unfolds we discover

that this great warrior obeys an even more powerful master. Massed ranks of

Imperial officers and stormtroopers honor the arrival of the almighty

Emperor on the second Death Star when he first appears in the flesh.

Luke's first impressions of Yoda are of a jester, not a Jedi. Luke

fails to see past appearances to the reality of Yoda's virtues. Yet the

virtues that emerge from Yoda's words and actions reveal him as a .Tedi

master. Similarly, the virtues of the Stoic wise man are precisely what.

enable him to be happy no matter what. What specific virtues does Yoda

display? When Yoda offers to take Luke to the Jedi master he seeks, Luke

insists that it be done immediately. Instead, Yoda suggests that they first

eat. When Luke objects, Yoda replies "For the Jedi it is time to eat as

well." Timeliness is a virtue for Yoda. Why is it a virtue? Because just as

what one does and how one does it matters, so too when $\,$ one $\,$ acts $\,$ matters.

Whereas Luke often doesn't act appropriately for the moment, Yoda's acts

are timely. Timeliness is a key virtue for a ${\tt Jedi,}$ as it is for the ${\tt Stoic}$

wise man.

While Yoda prepares their first meal together, Luke is impatient to be

brought to the Jedi master. Yoda urges Luke to have patience-a virtue Yoda

has cultivated over centuries. Luke's impatience turns into frustration and

vexation. Disappointed, Yoda addresses Obi-Wan Kenobi's disembodied

presence, "I cannot teach him. The boy has no patience." It finally dawns

on Luke that this weird, elderly goblin is the Jedi master himself.

Appearance had blinded Luke to reality.

Yoda criticizes Luke for his inability to focus on his present

situation. Yoda says, "All his life has he looked away... to the future, to

the horizon. Never his mind on where he was... what he was doing." Yoda

dismisses Luke's lust for adventure and excitement as things a Jedi does

not crave. Yoda is never distracted by frivolous desires for adventure or

excitement, nor does he worry about things beyond his control. This too is

characteristic of the Stoic, who enjoys equanimity and peace of mind. Yoda

focuses on the task at hand and how to act in the present, whether $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

consulting with other Jedi, eating, training Luke, or resting. Focus on

present is another Jedi virtue, and one which is shared by the Stoic.

Yoda cautions the young Anakin that "A Jedi must have the deepest

commitment, the most serious mind." This warning is repeated decades later

to Luke. Yoda's mental seriousness, deep commitment to the lifelong Jedi

pursuit of mastering the Force, and rejection of frivolity, however, do not

mean that he's humorless. Yoda indulges his sense of humor in allowing Luke

to be blinded by his presumptions about what a Jedi master looks like.

Yoda observes in The Empire Strikes Back that there is much $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

Luke, like there was in his father. Yet Yoda, in contrast, never gets

angry. As he says, "Fear is the path to the Dark Side. Fear leads to anger.

Anger leads to hate. Hate leads to suffering." Wiser words are never spoken

in all of Star Wars. Later Yoda tells Luke: "Anger... fear... aggression.

The Dark Side of the Force are they." This is the logic of the Light Side

of the Force: (1) Fear leads to anger, then to hate, then to aggression.

(2) Aggression leads to the suffering of both aggressor $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

Yoda is never seen to suffer implies that he is never fearful, angry,

hateful, or aggressive. The Stoic wise man, just like Yoda, lacks the vices

of fear, anger, hatred, and aggression. But does rejection of aggression

require pacifism? When can a Jedi fight? Yoda says, "A Jedi uses the Force

for knowledge and defense, never for attack." Although Yoda actively

defends and protects when necessary, 6 he lacks the vice of aggression.

Yoda wisely knows that fear, anger, hate, and aggression lead to

suffering and the Dark Side of the Force, and his wisdom allows him to tell

the difference between the Light Side and the Dark Side of the Force. Yoda

explains to Luke that he will know the difference between the two when he

is "calm, at peace, passive."

Stoicism and the Virtues of the Sage

Several elements of Stoicism help us to better understand Yoda's

virtues. The Stoics believed that the goal of life was to live in agreement

with Nature. This meant several things. First, Nature, that is, the cosmos

as a whole, is structured and well-ordered through and through according to

Logos, reason. As I will explain more fully below, Logos is akin, to the

Force. Second, to live in agreement with Nature requires embracing and

making good use of all events that unfold in this rationally structured

universe. So living in harmony with cosmic events entails living in agreement with our distinctive human nature. While we have

agreement with our distinctive human nature. While we have various

functions in common with other animals, the Stoics believed that reason is

our special, distinctive natural endowment. So to live well is to harmonize

our distinctive human reason as individuals with the larger rational $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left($

structure of the universe. The Stoic Epictetus says:

God has introduced humans into the world as spectators of himself and $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1$

of his works; and not only as spectators, but interpreters of them. It is

therefore shameful that humans should begin and end where irrational

creatures do. We ought rather to begin there, but to end where nature

itself has fixed our end, and that is in $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left$

and a way of life in harmony with nature.

The Stoics understood the perfection of reason to be virtue itself. So

the successful, good human life is the life in agreement with virtue.

life, according to the Stoics. Vice guarantees misery. Because of this,

they believed that virtue is the only thing that is really good, and that

vice is the only thing that is really bad. Knowledge of what is really $\ensuremath{\mathsf{E}}$

good, what is really bad, and what is neither, they thought, is crucial $\overline{}$

to living well. Moreover, the Stoics believed that all the virtues-wisdom,

justice, courage, self-control, piety, and generosity-were really just

perfected reason applied to various spheres of conduct.

Reason leads the Stoic to concentrate his mind on what is $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +$

and under his control rather than worrying about, fearing, anticipating, or

being distracted by anything that is beyond his control and not up to him.

Timely behavior, for example, is under one's control and is a virtue of the

Stoic. This mindful concentration on what is within one's control allows

the Stoic to be calm and even-tempered no matter what happens, $\,$ and $\,$ to be

high-minded and noble of heart by rising above trivial or frivolous matters $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

that plague non-Stoics.

In addition, the Stoic seeks to free himself from all passion,

excitation, and frivolity in order to be able to apply his reason reliably.

The Stoics understood "passion" (pathos in Greek) to be a disturbing,

unhealthy movement of the soul. That is why a sickness (of the soul) is

called a pathology. The Stoic who has succeeded in freeing himself from all

disturbances to his reason has become good. The Stoics believed that there

are no degrees of goodness. Until a man is good, he is bad. For the Stoics,

the good man thus functions as a prescriptive ideal known $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +$

wise man or "sage." The sage's soul is steady, orderly, completely

virtuous, and it does not suffer from any "passion." However, the Stoic

sage is not devoid of all emotion. The Stoics believed that there were

three "good emotional states" that were not pathological movements $\,$ of the

soul, namely, benevolence (wishing someone good things for his own sake),

joy (in virtuous deeds), and caution (reasonable wariness).

Clearly Yoda has many Stoic traits. Yoda is free from the emotions

that subvert reason. Yoda is not reckless or impatient, as Luke is at

first. Nor is Yoda frivolous. Like a Stoic, Yoda never becomes perturbed or

excited. Most significantly, Yoda does not succumb to anger. The ancient

Roman Stoic Seneca ica. 3-ca. 65 c.e.) called anger "the most hideous and

frenzied of all the emotions." Seneca thought $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1$

saying of anger:

Oblivious of decency, heedless of personal bonds, obstinate and intent

on anything once started, closed to reasoning or advice, agitated on pretexts without foundation, incapable of discerning fairness or truth, it most resembles those ruins which crash in pieces over what they have crushed.

Yoda also exhibits the positive emotions allowed to a Stoic. Since
Yoda doesn't fear, get angry, or hate, he doesn't suffer. Yoda
concentrates
on what is up to him and what he can do in the present. He thus
enjoys
impassivity, the lack of disturbing passions the Stoics called
apatheia.
Yoda is calm and even-tempered. He can tell the difference between the
good
and bad sides of the Force, and knows what is good, what is bad, and
what
is neither. Knowing that only virtue is good, only vice is bad,
and
everything else is really indifferent to one's happiness is the heart
of
Stoic wisdom.

Yoda is also benevolent and cautious. His quirky humor displays a quasi-Stoic joy. His odd wit and unusual pattern of speech humanize him by tempering his seriousness. One of the ancient Greek names for the Stoic sage is spoudaios, which means "serious person." Perfecting one's mind by conditioning it to make only rational judgments about all things that occur is a very serious business that requires commitment. The Stoics called this arduous training and disciplined practice askesis (from which we get the word "ascetic," a person devoted to austere self-discipline). Yoda too displays the virtue of commitment and lives an ascetic lifestyle in both his sparse quarters in the Jedi Temple on Coruscant and his simple mudhut on Dagobah.

The Stoics believed that the wise man, the virtuous person, was as

rare as the phoenix, due to the difficulty of disciplining oneself to \max

consistently rational judgments. Such mental discipline, they thought,

required an entire life to cultivate. That is why the Stoics distinguished

between those who are simply vicious and those who are making progress

toward virtue, though still suffering from vice. Even if becoming a sage

turns out to be unachievable over the course of an entire life, progress

toward this ideal state is possible. Someone who is progressing toward

virtue they called a "progressor." Similarly, Luke can be seen as a

"progressor." He is an apprentice-first of Obi-Wan, then of Yoda-as he

strives to learn the ways of the Force and become a Jedi.

To recap, the virtues the Jedi shares with the Stoic sage are patience, timeliness, deep commitment, seriousness (as opposed

to

frivolity), calmness (as opposed to anger or euphoria), peace-fulness (as $\ensuremath{\mathsf{e}}$

opposed to aggression), caution (as opposed to recklessness), benevolence

(as opposed to hatred), joy (as opposed to sullenness), passivity (as $\frac{1}{2}$

opposed to agitation), and wisdom. Given all these virtues, Yoda certainly

resembles what the ancient Stoics described as the sage-the ideal person

who has perfected his reason and achieved complete wisdom. In contrast with

Luke's youth and inexperience, Yoda has had over eight centuries to study $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right$

and attune himself to the Force.

The perfection of the Stoic sage's character in his human reason

mirrors the perfection of all of Nature, which the Stoics believed was

coherently structured through and through. The sage acts in accord with and

accepts events that occur in the world since his personal $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +$

will harmonize with cosmic reason and fate. The sage understands the

principles of regularity by which the universe operates. His knowledge of

Nature thus guides his conduct. Is this similar to following the Force?

Yoda says that life creates the Force and makes it grow, and that the energy of the Force surrounds people and binds them, and that it pervades the entire physical world. This description resembles the ancient Stoics' idea of the "breath" that pervades all objects in the cosmos. This "breath, " composed of the elements air and fire, is the sustaining cause of bodies, and it controls the growth and development of all living bodies. holds the cosmos together as the passive principle of all matter. active principle pervading the cosmos is the "reason" that is one and same as Nature, fate, providence, and the Greek god Zeus. When Yoda the telekinetic power of the Force to lift Luke's X-wing fighter from swamp on Dagobah, he uses the power of his mind to move matter. A master, it seems, while not omnipotent, can use the active power of to move passive matter. In this modest way, Jedi who use telekinesis something like Zeus or providence, as understood by Stoics. Telekinesis, psychic perception of events that are distant in space

The Stoics emphasized that ethics, physics (the study of Nature), and

time, and the luminous afterlife of dead Jedi constitute the mystical

side

of the Force.

logic (the study of speech, language, and argument) are the three

interconnected branches of philosophy. So does Stoic philosophy allow for

the mystical? The mystical element of the Force conflicts with the Stoics

understanding of the physical world. Yoda tells Luke: "Luminous beings are

we... not this crude matter." This is confirmed by the scenes that show the $\ensuremath{\mathsf{E}}$

deceased Obi-Wan, Yoda, and Anakin as non-physical, yet luminous, visible

disembodied spirits. Since the Emperor was a master of the Dark Side, would

he too continue to exist as a luminous, disembodied spirit? Or would he be

a dark, shadowy disembodied spirit? For the Stoics, these kinds of

metaphysical quandaries are ludicrous. The Stoics were physicalists who

believed that souls (minds) were just as physical as flesh and blood

bodies. They reasoned that since one's soul causally interacts with one's

body, and one's body is physical, then one's soul must be physical too. So

the Stoics rejected the notion of non-physical souls (or minds or spirits)

that are the "luminous beings" Yoda claims to be the real Luke and Yoda.

For the Stoics, a person is destroyed when his body is destroyed, whereas

deceased Jedi apparently enjoy an afterlife $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

with, see, and be seen by, the living.

While the naturalism of Stoicism rules out supernatural, disembodied

spirits, the sage's understanding of Nature is amazingly profound and

total. In fact, the Stoic sage has infallible knowledge of what should be

done in every situation. The sage takes the right steps at the right times

and does them in the right way to accomplish the right goal. But is Yoda a

Stoic who acts from reason in every situation? No, Yoda feels the Force

guiding his actions and the counsel he gives. Qui-Gon says to Anakin, $% \left(\frac{1}{2}\right) =\frac{1}{2}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right) +\frac{1}{2}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right) +\frac{1}{$

"Feel, don't think, use your instincts." Obi-Wan tells Luke, "Trust your

feelings." So the character traits that make reason possible for a Stoic

resemble the traits that make it possible for Jedi like Yoda to feel and

harness the Force.

In Star Wars, of course, there is also a Dark Side of the Force. Darth

Vader and the Emperor also harness the Force to achieve their goals. $_{\mbox{\scriptsize How}}$

does the Dark Side shape Darth Vader and the Emperor? What makes them evil

if Yoda is supposed to be good?

The Logic of the Dark Side

To answer these questions we must reconstruct the logic of the $\ensuremath{\mathsf{Dark}}$

Side of the Force. Here again the contrast between appearance and reality

reveals clues. In Qui-Gon's first meeting with the Jedi Council, Yoda

observes: "Hard to see, the Dark Side is." Is this double entendre intended

as a joke or a serious insight? In any case, it well describes how the

Emperor appears. His head and face are hidden inside a dark, hooded cloak.

Like the Dark Side itself, the Emperor is hard to see and an obvious foil

to Yoda. Both Yoda and the Emperor are ascetic devotees of the Force. Both

wear simple robes. Neither is tempted by bodily pleasures. Both appear to

live monkish lives of religious devo-tion. Is the Emperor merely evil or is

his character more complex?

The Emperor does seem to have several virtues. Like Yoda, the $\operatorname{\mathsf{Emperor}}$

has a serious mind and the deepest commitment, though his is to the ${\tt Dark}$

Side. The Emperor is the Master of the Dark Side, and this surely must $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

count as a kind of supremacy. Moreover, in Return of the jedi $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1$

urges patience on Vader in his search for Luke, a virtue Yoda shares. In

these respects, the Emperor and Yoda appear to be similar. How are they

really different?

A few scenes later the Emperor says that Luke's compassion for his

father will be his undoing. The Emperor sees compassion as a weakness, not.

a strength, a vice, not a virtue. The Stoics rejected compassion as

irrational. Taking on the "disturbing passion" (pathos) of someone who is

miserable makes you miserable too, so it's foolish to be misery's company

by feeling compassion. Unlike the Emperor, however, the Stoics thought that

it's virtuous to show compassion to others by acting to help them. Doing

things to help others is beneficence. Beneficence can be motivated by

philanthropy, kindness, or simple recognition of one's fellow beings as

members of the community of rational persons in the cosmos we all inhabit.

The ancient Greek Stoics originated this idea of a citizen of the universe

or "cosmopolitan." The Emperor clearly has no such inclusive vision of the

subjects populating his Empire.

So while the Emperor is correct, from a Stoic perspective, to reject

the feeling of compassion as a weakness, he is wrong to be cruel by failing

to show compassion to those he can help, From the Stoic perspective, his

logic is twisted. But what twists it? What makes the Dark Side of the Force

dark? Why think the $\,$ Emperor $\,$ is $\,$ evil $\,$ rather $\,$ than $\,$ simply $\,$ eccentric or $\,$

illogical?

The logic of the Dark Side is glimpsed in the moving conversation

between Luke and Vader. Vader wants to turn Luke to the Dark Side, so that

he will join Vader and the Emperor. Luke senses the moral conflict within

Vader, and wishes to turn his father back to the Light Side. Vader tells

Luke "You don't know the power of the Dark Side.? I must obey my master."

The Force is power that can be directed toward good or bad ends. Obi-

Wan, Yoda, and all the "good" Jedi use the Force to achieve their goals.

Vader and the Emperor do the same. Yoda says that the Force is his ally.

Vader, however, is a servant of the Dark Side. Vader is in its power,

because he must obey his Master, the Emperor. So the essence of the $\operatorname{\mathsf{Dark}}$

Side is mastery over others, or tyranny. But the Dark Side limits the $\,$

masters to only two Sith at a time-the Master and the Servant.

"When Vader brings Luke captive to the Emperor, the Emperor says he looks forward to completing Luke's training as his new master and gloats about the trap he has set for Luke's friends on the moon of Endor. The Emperor goads Luke by urging him to take his lightsaber.

You want this, don't you? The hate is swelling in you now. Take your Jedi weapon. Use it. I am unarmed. Strike me down with it. Give in to your anger. With each passing moment you make yourself more my servant.

The Emperor continues to torment Luke, basking in his suffering:
"Good. I can feel your anger. I am defenseless. Take your weapon! Strike me down with all your hatred and your journey toward the Dark Side will be complete." When Luke is fighting Vader, the Emperor is pleased. He congratulates Luke for using his aggressive feelings and letting the hate flow through him: "You, like your father, are now mine."

So in contrast to the logic of the Light Side, the logic of the Dark
Side is this: (1) Anger leads to hatred. (2) Hatred leads to aggression aimed at the mastery of others. (3) Mastery of others is true power.
(4)
True power is irresistibly desirable. When Luke slashes off Vader's right hand with his lightsaber, the Emperor applauds Luke: "Your hate has made you powerful." But Luke refuses to kill Vader, as the Emperor wishes:
"You've failed, Your Highness. I am a Jedi, like my father before me." If mastery of others and enslavement to evil fails, then the Dark logic demands destruction: "If you will not be turned, you will be destroyed."

Consequently, the Emperor is a propagator of terror, hatred, and cruelty. He gloats and takes pleasure in the distress of others. The ancient Stoics were quite familiar with tyrants like Cambyses of Persia, Hippias of Athens (both sixth century b.c.e.), and Gaius Caligula (first

century c.e.). These tyrants, along with the evil Emperor Palpatine, can be

usefully contrasted with the Stoic Marcus Aurelius (121-180 c.e.), who

ruled the Roman empire from 161 to 180 c.e. The benevolence and rectitude

of the Emperor Marcus is plain in his Meditations. The Stoic does not seek

to exploit others. Rather, the Stoic aims at emotional self-sufficiency and

cultivating his own mental discipline. This means that the Stoic sage has

succeeded in mastering himself by having mastered his $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1$

eliminated vice from his character.

Luke is therefore urging Stoic wisdom upon Vader when he tells him to

let go of his hate. Unfortunately, hatred has had such a viselike hold on

Vader for so long that he tells Luke: "It is too late for me, son.10 $\,\mathrm{The}$

For servants of the Dark Side, the true nature of the Force is servitude to

evil, enslavement to hate. Like virtues, vices tend to control one's

behavior. Vader has used fear and hatred to achieve his ends for so long

that now the superior hatred and aggression of the Emperor use $\mbox{him.}$ That is

how Vader's mastery of the Dark Side is at the same time servitude to it.

The reality behind the monkish appearance of the Emperor is the soul $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right$

of a monster afflicted by vice. On the other hand, the Emperor's hatred

follows a cool logic of its own. His cruelty is calmly calculated, not

haphazard. The Emperor shows an icy rationality and self-possession that is

a shallow reflection of the Stoic's passionlessness. His is an arrogant11

rationality which seeks to dominate, exploit, and enslave people through

careful planning and use of the Dark Side of the Force. As Luke warns him,

"Your overconfidence is your weakness." According to Stoicism, however, the

Emperor's cleverness, devotion, and self-possession are not virtues. As a

tyrant, the Emperor's goal is to master things and people that are in fact

beyond his control rather than to master himself by becoming virtuous.

Since the Emperor fails to understand what is really good, namely virtue,

and what is really bad, namely vice, he lacks Stoic wisdom. Since he lacks

wisdom, he lacks all the virtues, and so he is full of vice. Since he has

no desire to gain wisdom, his mind is fundamentally flawed and his vice is

incurable. As a consequence, when $\mbox{Vader throws him into the reactor shaft,}$

he appears to die suffering.

"Control, Control, You Must Learn Control"

Yoda and the other Jedi use discipline, commitment, and training

control themselves, thereby harnessing the power of the Force. Vader

the Emperor, on the other hand, stoke their anger and hatred to empower

themselves with the Dark Side of the Force. They feed, rather than

overcome, the negative emotions within themselves. They seek to control not

themselves, but others, in an ultimately doomed attempt to fill the cold.

black void behind the mask or the hood with the false satisfaction that

arises from domination and oppression of others. A Stoic could never be

seduced by the Dark Side, but might well feel at home among the calm, self- $\,$

disciplined, virtuous Jedi. But a Stoic indulges in none of the

supernaturalism or mysticism expressed in some aspects of the Force in Star

Wars. The wisdom of Yoda and the $\,$ vices of the $\,$ Emperor are illuminated

nicely by the plain light of natural reason provided by the Stoic

philosophy.

The Far East of Star Wars

WALTER (RITOKU) ROBINSON

The "Force" is central to the Star Wars mythology. In A New Hope Obi-

Wan Kenobi describes it as "an energy field created by all living things.

It surrounds us and penetrates us. It binds the galaxy together." This is

an extremely good description of what is known in Chinese as "ch'i," or in

Japanese as "ki."

In the Star Wars galaxy, the Jedi use the Force in their fighting $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +$

arts. "A Jedi's strength flows from the Force," Yoda teaches Luke. In the

martial arts of the Far East, ch'i is cultivated to give special fighting

advantage over someone who relies only on physical strength.

philosophy, most especially philosophical Taoism and Zen Buddhism, plays a

major role in the Star Wars mythology. This is most true in relation to the

martial-arts philosophy of the Jedi. The $\,$ historical $\,$ development $\,$ of this

philosophy begins with a Buddhist synthesis with Taoism producing Zen and

Kung-fu. This synthesis spread to Korea and Japan, and with it the

knowledge of ch'i. The philosophy of the Force is thus best understood by

way of understanding the nature of ch'i and the wisdom of Zen.

"Looking? Found Someone You Have"

The origin of $\operatorname{ch'i-oriented}$ martial arts in China is found in the

teachings from the Shaolin Temple. It was here that Bodhidarma, who came

from India to China in the sixth century, founded Ch'an (known in Japanese

as Zen) and Kung-fu, a discipline that cultivates and directs the flow of

ch'i, applying it to fighting techniques.

(ch'i)

health

The Shaolin Temple was founded as a Buddhist monastery in 497 c.e.
When Bodhidarma arrived he found that the monks were weak and in ill

and tended to fall asleep during meditation. China at this time $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

state of disunity with competing military powers fighting with one another

and bands of bandits wandering the countryside. Buddhist monks in central

Asia had evolved a system of self defense based in Yoga and utilizing

"prana"-a Sanskrit term the meaning of which approximates ch'i. Bodhidarma

came out of this tradition, integrating it with Taoist practice, and taught

it to the Shaolin monks to promote heath, mental discipline, self-defense,

and spiritual awareness.

The origin of Buddhism goes back a thousand years before Bodhidarma to

the teachings of Gautuma Sakyamuni in Northern India. As an advanced

student of Yoga, Gautuma was principally concerned with liberation from the

bonds of karma, which causes suffering. The idea is that one is subject to

innumerable incarnations due to the conditions of karma-that is, past $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left($

actions produce the conditions of the present moment, and what one does $\ensuremath{\mathsf{now}}$

determines the conditions of the future. In this there is suffering due to

ignorance of reality. With enlightenment (which is the meaning of the word

"Buddha") one comes to know reality and thus liberation from the chains of

karma. Bodhidarma was in a lineage of mind-to-mind transmission through

twenty eight generations beginning with Sakyamuni Buddha. At Shaolin, he

transmitted this wisdom, which is the essence of Zen.

The character of Yoda was created with ${\tt Zen}$ in mind. George Lucas

envisioned a character one would find in traditional fairy tales or

mythologies, like a frog or a wizened old man on the side of the road. The

hero meets this character thinking him to be insignificant, yet he holds

the very wisdom the hero needs to fulfill his quest.

Lucas learned from Joseph Campbell that underlying religious

mythologies are archetypal patterns which reflect universal truth.1 Dig

deeply enough into any of the great spiritual traditions and one comes upon

a reservoir of truth common to all $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

mythology is an intentional expression of archetypal truth. This truth is

known through mystical experience. Campbell maintained that the Zen

experience is the mystical wisdom which springs forth from the $\ensuremath{\mathsf{great}}$

reservoir of universal truth. Thus Yoda is intended to be a motif for $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1$

universal wisdom. When Luke Skywalker enters into Jedi training, he

undergoes what Lawrence Kasdan (screenwriter for The Empire Strikes Back)

envisioned as Zen education. He tells us that "the stories I find most $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

interesting are stories of Zen education and the Zen master teaching a $\,$

pupil how to transcend physical prowess into some kind of mental prowess.

That's what all the training sequences are about."

"Don't Give In to Hate: That Leads to the Dark Side"

When Buddhism was introduced to China, it entered into dialectic with

Taoism and the synthesis of Buddhism with Taoism produced the Zen

philosophy. The notion of ch'i is rooted in Taoism, which teaches that the

ch'i is manifested as yin and yang, the light and the dark, and that one

must harmonize with this energy which requires balance. Lucas said that

"The idea of positive and negative, that there are two sides to an entity,

a push and a pull, a yin and a yang, and the struggle between the two sides $\frac{1}{2}$

are issues of nature that I wanted to include in the film."

The word "tao" literally translates from the Chinese as "way" and the $\,$

philosophy of Tao is about the Way of nature. Everything in nature exists

in the field of opposites: up-down, left-right, in-out, male-female, light-

dark, positive-negative, yang-yin, and so forth. The Way of nature has

tendency toward balance which is the Great Harmony know as Tai Chi, which

literally means "Supreme Ultimate." The so called "yin-yang symbol (a

circle the inside of which is divided by a wavy line, one half being light

with a dark dot, and the other half dark with a light dot) is properly

called the emblem of Tai Chi. The white dot in the dark side and the dark

dot in the light side symbolize the interdependence of opposites.

In The Phantom Menace, Qui-Gon Jinn refers to "the prophecy of the one

who will bring balance to the Force," believing the "one" to be Anakin

Skywalker. This implies something other than a duality of good versus evil.

In Taoist thought there is neither absolute good nor absolute evil,

rather good and evil are relative conditions of one another. As Obi-Wan

puts it, "You're going to find that many of the truths we cling to depend

greatly on our own point of view." From a Taoist point of view, it is not

possible to have the light without also having darkness, or in the language

of Star Wars, one cannot exist without the Dark Side being everpresent.

When Anakin Skywalker becomes Darth Vader, he is seduced by the Dark Side.

but in Return of the jedi, his son, Luke, draws him back to goodness.

Anakin thus bring balance back to the Force in himself as well $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

galaxy by destroying the Emperor.

Is it possible to be out of balance with too much goodness? The short

answer is "yes." The prequel trilogy outlines just such a condition where

the Jedi Order finds itself in the smugness of complacency as the Dark Side $\,$

is active right under their noses. The Jedi are living so much in the light

of morality, that the shadow of unconscious desire, symbolized by the Sith ,

takes on a life of its own and, like an unsupervised child, becomes

delinquent. If one is out of touch with the shadow side of one's nature-

one's Dark Side-it become pathological, like feeling lust or greed and

living in denial or otherwise becomes unconscious, such that it only

magnifies itself in the repressed unconsciousness. This, it seems, $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

lesson that Luke learns in the depths and darkness of the cave on Dagobah

in which he confronts his own Dark Side.

Yoda teaches Luke that "a Jedi's strength flows from the Force. But

beware of the Dark side. Anger... fear... aggression. The Dark Side of the

Force are they. Easily they flow, quick to join you in a fight."

Luke asks if the Dark Side is stronger. "No" answers Yoda, but it is "quicker, easier, more seductive."

Luke then asks, "How am I to know the good side from the bad?"

"You will know. When you are calm, at peace, passive. A Jedi uses the $\,$

Force for knowledge and defense, never for attack."

According to Buddhist psychology, there are three poisons which

produce the karma of suffering: attraction, repulsion, and ignorance.

Attraction includes desire to have or possessiveness, greed, lust, and any

other emotions of holding on or clinging to what is wanted. Anakin's

excessive clinging attachment to his mother leads him into self-destructive

hate and rage. The problem is not that he loves his mother, for that is

good and natural; but his attachment, rooted in the \mbox{fear} of \mbox{losing} her,

leads him to aggression when her death sends him into a rage and he

slaughters a tribe of Sand People, including women and children. Following

this is his fear-based, ego-centered drive to be strong enough never to

lose what he is attached to again, blaming his own weakness for his

mother's death. He promises Padme, "I will be the most powerful Jedi ever."

Anakin thus suffers repulsion toward his own perceived weakness. Out

of repulsion are generated fear, anger, hate, violence, and other such

emotions. In The Empire Strikes Back, Vader prompts Luke to use his hate.

And in Return of the Jedi, the Emperor goads "Use your aggressive feelings,

boy. Let the hate flow through you." Acting out of such emotions leads to

the I)ark Side. Luke knows this and so encourages his father to "let go of

your hate," as doing so will lead Anakin back to the good that Luke has

faith must still exist in him.

Both attraction and repulsion are rooted in ignorance, which is the

illusion of being an isolated individual ego. Buddhism teaches that there

is no inherently substantial self. Everything is impermanent. All is in

process, with everything changing, always flowing. Nothing is in isolation

from the whole of this ever changing process. Existence is not made of

parts, but is a relative process of interdependence. As $\mbox{Obi-Wan}$ says, "The

Force binds the galaxy together." And it's interesting to note that the one

hero character who explicitly professes to not believe in the Force is

named Han "Solo," derived from the Latin for "alone."

The ignorance of egotism produces the negative karma of suffering.

When one is constricted by one's ego, the emotions characteristic of the

Dark Side are generated. In The Phantom Menace Yoda warns Anakin, "Fear is

the path to the Dark Side... Fear leads to anger... anger leads to hate...

hate leads to suffering." Fear is the clinging of ego, of not realizing the

oneness of life. Anger and hate follow. Sakyamuni Buddha said that he

taught one thing and one thing only, how to be free from suffering. This

freedom is the letting go of clinging to the ego. With this letting go,

negative emotions dissolve into nothingness.

When Yoda teaches Luke to know by way of being calm, at peace,

passive, this is the teaching of Tao. In Taoism, and in the Tao of Zen,

there is the practice of letting go and emptying. Lao-tzu writes in the Tao

Te Ching, the core text of Taoism, that the Tao is to unlearn and to undo.

Yoda says to Luke, "You must unlearn what you have learned!" In Chinese

this directive is called "Wu Wei," which literally means "no action"; but a

better translation would be effortless action or ego-less spontaneity. When

Yoda says to be passive, he does not intend for Luke to become inactive,

for the Force is ever in motion, like water flowing in a river-passively in

action without effort.

In the Japanese martial art of Aikido, effortless action is of the

essence. The name "Aikido" means the way (do) of harmonizing or unifying

(ai) the ch'i (ki). In order to use the ki, one must let go of effort. In

the prequel trilogy one Jedi Master is named "Ki-Adi-Mundi," which seems to

be inspired by the name "Aikido." When Obi-Wan begins to teach Luke the Way

of the Force, he says, "A Jedi can feel the Force flowing through him."

When Luke asks if "it controls your actions," Obi-Wan answers: "Partially,

but it also obeys your commands." This is an important teaching in all of

the $\mbox{ch'i/ki-ori-ented}$ martial arts and what differentiates them from gross

fighting techniques.

"Great Warrior? Wars Not Make One Great"

Buddhist monks traveling throughout China, Korea, and Japan shared $\,$

their martial arts with worthy students. About a half-century after the $% \left(\frac{1}{2}\right) =0$

founding of Shaolin Kung-fu, the king of Silla on the Korean peninsula

invited Buddhist warrior monks to begin training an elite order of warriors

to be known as Hwa Rang. This order was to serve the kingdom, $\ensuremath{\mathsf{uphold}}$

justice, and maintain social order. They were a monastic order trained in

not only martial arts, but also the healing arts, Taoist Ch'i kung, the

arts of political leadership and diplomacy, as well as Buddhist philosophy.

Like the Jedi, the Hwa Rang were chosen at a young age, trained to be pure

of mind, and to follow a strict ethical code of loyalty, honor, and $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

service. They were also given authority over the regular military in $\ensuremath{\mathsf{much}}$

the same way the Jedi are in Attack of the Clones.

Buddhism was first introduced to Japan through Korea, and with it also

the Buddhist martial arts forming the basis of Jujutsu. In Japan,

Sohei, an order of warrior monks much like the Hwa Rang, was developed.

They lived in mountain monasteries surrounding the Imperial capital of

Kyoto. Their considerable political power eventually put them at odds with

the Shogun (military ruler over the warrior class, the samurai),

culminating in the fifteenth century when samurai destroyed the Sohei

monastic complex, killing most of its monks; parallel to the way in which

the Jedi are practically wiped out in Revenge of the Sith. A few Sohei went

into hiding, blending in with non-militant monks, and over time they taught

their martial arts to other monks and a few worthy samurai. Eventually,

Buddhist martial arts became the core of samurai training.

The indigenous religion of Japan is Shintoism, which centers around $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

reverence for the ancestors and worship of the Japanese Kmperor as a divine

incarnation. Traditional Japan was hierarchical with the Emperor and

family on top, then the nobility, and then the samurai. The common people

were subordinate and submissive to this social structure. The word

"samurai" means "to serve." It was the role of the samurai to serve

good of the nation with honor and loyalty to the Emperor, and with absolute

obedience to his master even unto death. The samurai had a strict $\,$ code of

conduct known as Bushido, which means "The way of the warrior." The code

consists of general precepts which are open-ended and fluid. Over time it

would integrate into itself much of the ethical teaching of Buddhism.

The sword is the soul of a samurai. The relationship that a samurai

has to his sword is much like a Jedi's relationship to his lightsaber. The

name "Jedi" is derived from the samurai era of swordsmen called
"Jidai

geki," which literally means "the era of play," referring to samurai-

inspired settings or themes used in Japanese drama. The Jedi's kimonostyle

dress is loosely based on samurai clothing with the addition of a medieval

hood to give a more monkish motif. Vader's helmet and armor are based on

those used by the samurai as well. Swordplay in the original Star $\mbox{\tt Wars}$

trilogy reflects the way of sword called Kendo, as derived from the samurai

tradition. In the prequel trilogy we see sword styles based more on $\ensuremath{\mathsf{Kung-}}$ fu.

Zen master Takuan Soho wrote to a sword master giving $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1$

and the art of swordsmanship. He advised to have a "no-mind" mindfulness.

Do not let the mind stop, but keep it flowing. As soon as the mind stops it

localizes itself, thus becoming limited. Rather than localizing the mind,

"let it fill up the whole body, let it flow throughout the totality of your

being... Let it go all by itself freely and unhindered and uninhibited."4

Soho goes on to say that when the mind is nowhere - that is, when $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) ^{2}$ it does

not stop at any location-it is everywhere. In $\ \mbox{\rm Zen}\ \ \mbox{\rm practice}$ one is with

one's original mind, which is no-mind. A mind that stops and localizes is a

delusive mind that is divided against itself, thus interfering with the

free working of original mind. When Obi-Wan tells Luke to let go of his

conscious self and act on instinct, he is essentially advising to let go of

the divided delusional mind and go with the original mind which is the \min

unconscious of itself: "A mind unconscious of itself is a mind that is not

at all disturbed by affects of any kind... the mind moves from one object

to another, flowing like a stream of water, filling every possible corner."

There is a story of a centipede that was asked how with so \mbox{many} legs

he was able to walk. When the centipede began to think about it he was not

able to walk. The act of walking is simple without thought, but think about

it and it become impossibly complex. To master is to simplify. The sword

master must act on no-mind spontaneity. Takuan tells his student that his

actions must be like sparks flying off flint struck by metal. There can be

no delay, no hesitation. Attack and response must be in the same moment,

such that no space and no time divide one thing $\ \$ from $\ \$ another. Zen sword

master Tesshu calls this the "sword of no sword." in which, as he says, $\mbox{\ensuremath{"\text{I}}}$

naturally blended with my opponent and moved in unhindered freedom."6

Aikido is founded on this same philosophy. In fact, it is literally the art

of the sword without the use of a sword. There is a story told about $\ensuremath{\mathsf{a}}$

Morihei Ueshiba, the founder of Aikido, being unarmed, defending himself

from a sword attack by a high-ranking swordsman, by avoiding the $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left$

thrusts until the swordsman gave up.

In The Empire Strikes Back, when Luke is confronted with a task that

he perceives as difficult, he declares, "Alright, I'll give it a try."

which Yoda responds, "No! Try not. Do or do not. There is no try." So long

as there is effort, that very effort divides the mind against itself. When

"I" try, the mind is divided between "I" and trying. With effort there is division between the actor and what's acted upon. This division is a psychological fabrication that fragments the whole into parts, thus removing one from original mind. In Zen enlightenment, known in Japanese as "satori," there is the experience of undivided wholeness. Satori is what Zen is all about.

Tesshu was one of the greatest sword masters. After his early training, he went for many years undefeated. Then he met Yoshiaki whom was not able to defeat. Although Yoshiaki was older and much smaller, repeatedly forced Tesshu to retreat. Tesshu began to suffer from the image of this master as a great mountain bearing down upon him. This was for like Luke's vision of Darth Vader inside the cave on Dagobah. And just the real obstacle for Luke was his own mind (as revealed in the severed head of Vader exploding into the likeness of Luke's face), so it was Tesshu. Thus he went to a Zen master for help. "If an opponent frightens you or confuses you," advised Zen Master Ganno, "it means you lack insight." Ganno gave Tesshu a koan for his zazen (Zen mediation practice). A koan is problem to work on with zazen that cannot be solved on the of thought. Some classic koans are: "Show me your original face before parents were born," and "What is the sound of one hand clapping?" To answer a koan, one must demonstrate insight which comes out of satori. After of Zen training Tesshu entered into a satori, after which the threatening image of Yoshiaki vanished. When next he encountered Yoshiaki and crossed swords, Yoshiaki withdrew his sword and declared, "You arrived." There was no further need to fight for there was "no-enemy." Luke says to Yoda, before he knows it is Yoda, that he is looking for "great warrior," Yoda asserts that "Wars not make one great." In like manner Tesshu only became truly great warrior when he realized that in

As a novice monk studying with Taizan Maezumi Roshi (a Japanese Zen master), I worked on a koan attributed to Bodhidarma: "If you use your to study reality, you will understand neither reality nor the mind. If study reality without using your mind, you will understand both." Axiomatic to Zen philosophy is the insight that conceptual understanding is illusorv. A core assumption of Western thought is that one can use intellect understand mind and reality. Zen asserts that this is not the case. understanding is beyond all conceptualization. The mind is endlessly active in effort to achieve that which is impossible for it. Zen is a philosophy to undo philosophy, to study mind and reality with no-mind. There is no to asking why and no way to give an intellectual answer that will be satisfactory. When Luke asks the "why question," Yoda answers, "No, there is no why. Nothing more will I teach you today. Clear you mind

Moral Ambiguity in a Black-and-White Universe

RICHARD H. DEES

questions. Mmm. Mmmmmmmm."

truth there is "no-enemy."

The moral universe of Star Wars has two colors: black and white. In the opening moments of A New Hope, we find Darth Vader, dressed all in black, confronting Princess Leia, dressed in virginal white. Every identifiable character in the six movies works either for the Light Side of the Force or for the Dark Side. It's a world with very few shades of gray, much less of brighter, more interesting moral colors. In this galaxy, unlike our own, there seems, at first glance, to be no room for moral tragedy, for choices where no answer is morally correct, or for plain moral

ambiguity.

Nevertheless, moral ambiguity can be found lurking in the Star Wars
universe, if we look for it. Often, important characters are
first
presented to us as morally ambiguous. When we meet them, we do not
know
whose side they are on in the war, but later, their true natures
reveal
themselves. We can, I think, learn some important moral lessons by
looking
at the ways characters like Han Solo or Lando Calrissian reason when
we
first meet them and at the ways in which they turn towards one side or
the
other. There are also a few cases that are closer to real ambiguity,
like
Count Dooku and Anakin Skywalker. From both kinds of cases, we can
learn
how to think about moral problems more deeply and more intelligently.

"What Good's a Reward if You Ain't Around to Use It?"

When we first meet Han Solo in A New Hope, he's a smuggler caught the web of the crime lord Jabba the Hutt. He's arrogant and cocky, "scoundrel," as Leia puts it. His moral philosophy is unmitigated egoism: he only looks after himself. "I take orders from just one person-me," proclaims. He accepts the mission to Alderaan only for the exorbitant that Obi-Wan offers him, and he helps to find Princess Leia in the Death Star only because Luke promises him a large reward. Indeed, even after rescues Leia, Han tells her, "I ain't in this for your revolution, and I'm not in it for you, Princess. I expect to be well paid. I'm in it for money." As soon as he delivers the Princess to the Rebel Alliance, takes his reward and departs, leaving Luke to observe bitterly, "Take of yourself, Han. I guess that's what you're best at, isn't it?" Han no reason to accept any authority, moral or otherwise, outside his self-interest.

In his egoism in A New Hope, Han is equaled only by Jango Fett in Attack of the Clones, who is, as he puts it, "just a simple man, trying to make my way in the universe." But Jango is clearly a mercenary for hire, willing to assassinate a senator for a price and even to sell his own genetic code for profit. His one act of apparent altruism is his obvious love for his son, Boba, the clone of himself that he insisted that the Kaminoans create for him. Although many parents love their children because they see themselves perpetuated in them, Jango's love for Boba carries this sentiment one step further towards mere narcissism.

Han and Jango's view is a | form of ethical egoism, the view that morally what I should do is what is in my interest to do. As the seventeenth-century philosopher Thomas Hobbes argues, "whatsoever is the [object of any mans Appetite or Desire, that is it, which he for his part calleth Good: And the object of his Hate, and Aversion, Evill."1 The only standard we can use for what is good, Hobbes says, is what we ourselves want. The world turns only by appealing to people's self-interest, and we should expect nothing else. Indeed, egoists argue, we are all better off in a world where everyone acts out their own self-interest than in a world where everyone is constantly interfering with others.

While we may be tempted to think otherwise, egoism is not an incoherent view. The interests of the Ewoks may be to enjoy the natural beauty of the forest and to live in harmony with the other living things there, and those of the Empire may be to level the trees to create a base that will better protect the construction of the second Death Star. But the conflict that results isn't a logical contradiction. Each can still

maintain that what they are doing is morally correct. It is, however, a

practical contradiction since they can't both do what they want. Dedicated

egoists argue we each have an interest in living in an ordered society

where conflicts about trees do not lead to either violence $\,$ or $\,$ to ongoing

hostility, and so we need to think about the interests of others to some

degree if we want to promote our own interests in the long run. Indeed, an

enlightened egoism that takes seriously what is needed to make society work

will make a place for loyalty, dedication, and even charity. Egoists can

also recognize that people's interests are directed not only towards

themselves, but also towards their loved ones, their country, and even

towards the environment. An enlightened egoism can, then, include much of

what is usually considered moral.

Han, unlike Jango, shows the necessary dispositions for this better

form of egoism: he shows, for example, genuine loyalty from the very

beginning. His affection for Chewbacca is obvious from our first encounter $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

with him, and he quickly develops an older brother's affection for Luke.

Even more importantly, Han shows a capacity for something more. When Leia

rebukes him, "If money is all that you love, then that's what you'll

receive" and then turns to Luke to add, "I wonder if he really cares about

anything or anyone," Han is clearly hurt. When Luke chides him for refusing $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

to join the Rebel attack on the Death Star, Han looks obviously guilty, and

Chewie reproaches him as only he can. So while $\mbox{\tt Han}$ claims that $\mbox{\tt he}$ rescues

Luke from Darth Vader in the Death Star trench because "I wasn't going to

let you [Luke] get all the credit and take all the reward," we know that

does it for Luke. Han demonstrates that loyalty once again on the ice

planet Hoth. When no one is able to find Luke in the base, Han.sets off to

find him over the objections of the other rebels. By the time he rescues

Luke against the odds (725 Bo 1 against, artoo calculates), we have tittle

doubt where his affections lie.

Later, he delays his own escape from the planet to $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

can get off too, and when he's captured by Darth Vader on Bespin, he tells

Chewie not to resist the Imperial forces because he needs him to take care

of Leia. Unlike the narrowly-egoistic Jango, Han is capable of true and

deep friendships. He is willing to risk all for both Luke and Leia.

Yet even on Hoth and Bespin, his own affairs still take precedence:

despite the Rebellion's need for his skills and his leadership, he tries to

leave the rebels so that he can pay off Jabba. To think a bounty hunter

will be able to capture him in the Rebellion's secret hideout surrounded by

loyal troops is simply implausible. When Leia argues truthfully (albeit to

hide her own feelings, even from herself) that "We need you," Han's only

interested in whether she needs him. And when they finally escape to

Bespin, he's still set on abandoning the Alliance. Despite the overwhelming

needs of others, Han still feels that he has to look after his own affairs,

no matter what the cost to others. He still has no loyalty to the Rebellion $\,$

or to the greater good, and he's still quick to look after himself and his

own affairs rather than the interests of others.

At this point, then, Han is still an egoist, albeit an enlightened

one. He cares for others, and so their welfare counts as part of Han's own

self-interest. What they need is part of what He considers when he thinks

about what he wants, and so he can then sometimes act for the sake of

others. Moreover, Han's egoism has its limits; we could never $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1$

taking money to assassinate a political leader. With a broadened $\operatorname{self-}$

interest, Han is certainly better morally than he seemed when we first met

him, but more is needed before he can acknowledge the moral value of

something greater than himself.

Yet his friendships with Leia and Luke allow him to see the importance

of the cause that they so easily embrace. His love for them eventually

leads him to commit himself to a greater good and to express a moral regard

for oppressed people everywhere. Following their moral examples, he becomes

a full member of the Rebel Alliance and one of its most important leaders.

By committing himself to a genuinely moral cause, he escapes his egoism. Or

perhaps, he does not so much escape his egoism as much as his self-interest

becomes so broad that it encompasses all of morality. In any case, Han has

been transformed from an arrogant and self-centered smuggler into a $\,$ moral

leader.

"This Deal Is Getting Worse All the Time"

At first glance, Lando Calrissian seems to be just like Han. Indeed,

he and Han ran in the same circles earlier in their lives, and he lost the $\ensuremath{^{\text{the}}}$

Millennium Falcon to Han in a card game. Like Han, Lando was a scoundrel.

For that reason, we may be tempted to see his decisions as egoistic as

well. Yet, when we meet Lando in The Empire Strikes Back, he is

administrator of Bespin, an independent mining colony. He has become, as

Han puts it, "a businessman, a responsible leader." Dealing with supply

problems, labor difficulties, and the complexities of running a large

enterprise, Lando understands, is "the price you pay for being successful."

Yet even before we actually meet $\mbox{him,}$ he has been confronted with a nasty

moral dilemma: he can either betray his old friend Han and turn him over to

Darth Vader, or he can allow Bespin to be overrun by Imperial

stormtroopers. We might view Lando's decision as egoistic: he betrays Han

to save his own neck. But Lando's decision is not so self-serving. The

lives of everyone on Bespin will be made substantially worse if the $\operatorname{\sc Empire}$

controls it, so Lando make a fairly straightforward utilitarian decision.

Utilitarianism is the view that, as the nineteenth-century philosopher $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

John Stuart Mill puts it, "actions are right in proportion as they tend to

promote happiness; wrong as they tend to produce the reverse of happiness.

"2 While the egoist promotes only her own happiness, the utilitarian

promotes the happiness of everyone. The correct moral action is the one

that creates the most happiness for the world: "the greatest happiness of

the greatest number" to use the Jeremy Bentham's famous phrase.3 $^{\mbox{\scriptsize To}}$

determine the right act, we look at each of the options that are available

to us and calculate the likely consequences of choosing that option. $\mathbf{W}_{\mathbf{Q}}$

then add up the happiness that would be created for every $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +$

if we choose that option and subtract the unhappiness. We then compare this

result with those of the other options, and then pick the one with the

highest total. Every person's happiness or unhappiness is weighed equally

in the calculation, so from a utilitarian point of view, the increased

happiness of a large number of people usually outweighs the pain suffered

by one. So when Lando gives up Han to prevent the great harms that his

people would suffer if the ${\tt Empire}$ commands his colony, he is ${\tt simply}$

weighing the good of the many against the harm to one.

In the context of The Empire Strikes Back, this decision looks like

moral cowardice. We want Lando to stand up to the Empire, to \mbox{try} to save

his friends, no matter what the cost. With E.M. Forster, we think that "if"

I had to choose between betraying my country and betraying my friend, $^{\scriptscriptstyle\mathsf{T}}$

hope I should have the guts to betray my country. "4 We $\,$ empathize $\,$ so much

with Han and Leia that we simply ignore the thousands of other people who

are affected by Lando's decision. But to put it in these terms shows how

narrow-minded such a judgment is. In fact, we expect the government to look

after the welfare of the whole society rather than the needs of a single

individual. Within some limits (which can often be justified on utilitarian

grounds),5 we expect government officials to act as utilitarians, $\$

maximizing the good for the whole community. Officials should think of the

nation and only incidentally of individuals, even if the individuals in

question are personal friends of the leader-indeed, especially if the

individuals are personal friends. We expect governmental officers to go out

of their way to avoid charges that they are acting out of their own

interests or those of their friends rather than out of those of the nation

as a whole. Imagine how we would judge the President of the United States

if he were willing to give in to terrorist demands to save the life $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right)$ of an

old hunting buddy from Mexico. Lando's actions would be exactly the same:

he would be turning over the colony to the tyranny of the Empire just to

save a gambling buddy who does not even belong to the colony. Seen in this

light, Lando's decision is not only reasonable, it's also what we would

expect from someone in his position.

Moreover, whatever Han thinks, Lando's choice is not between giving up $% \label{eq:landow} % \labelendow} % \labeleq % \labeleq % \labeleq % \labeleq % \labeleq % \$

Han and saving his colony. No matter what Lando does, Han will be captured

by Darth Vader: either Lando will surrender Han to Vader or

stormtroopers will capture him in their assault on the planet. So Lando's

real choice is only whether he's going to try to save the mining colony or

not. The choice he actually faces is much like one discussed by the moral philosopher Bernard Williams: an evil commandant offers to save nineteen his twenty innocent captives slated for execution if you personally will shoot one of them, despite your own pacifist convictions. The captive kill will die no matter what you do, so the question is whether you should act to save the other nineteen.6 Williams argues that a utilitarian morality - indeed, any abstract morality-requires too much if expects you to give up your own convictions to kill the one. Such a moral would violate your personal integrity, he claims. While Williams's position is appealing, it is ultimately based on a kind of moral selfishness: / never get my hands dirty, though the heavens may fall. Undoubtedly, you and Lando give up something important if you act as morality requires: you each give up a sense of moral purity. But ultimately, that sense is kind of moral vanity: it is the view that my moral sensibilities are more than the lives of the others. Even if Lando and you don't entirely trust either Darth Vader or the commandant to keep his word, the decision to try to help the many is not one of moral cowardice. Indeed, valuing actual lives of others over your own moral scruples is an act of courage. Yet even if we think that this reasoning is faulty and that in final analysis Lando is wrong, we shouldn't judge him a coward. He's acting in a clearly unreasonable or selfish manner. He simply weighs

In fact, Lando never really has any choice whatsoever. No matter what he does, the Empire is going to take over his colony and Han is going to be captured. So his plaintive refrain, "I had no choice," is really true. But Lando doesn't act immorally for trying to produce a different outcome. To

the

moral options differently.

his credit, when he realizes that his goals are hopeless, he does what he

can both to evacuate he opportunity to teach an important moral lesson:

sincere people can honestly disagree about the correct moral course.

"I'm a Jedi... I Know I'm Better Than This"

On the face of it, the most morally ambiguous character in the Star

Wars saga must be Anakin Skywalker. He changes from an innocent and good-

hearted young boy into a servant of the Emperor, the embodiment of darkness

itself. But I think that Anakin is not in fact so ambiguous.

As a child, Anakin is clearly on the side of good. He reaches out to

Padme and Qui-Gon on Tatooine, offering them shelter from a sandstorm.

Hearing their troubles, he immediately seeks to help them, risking his own

life in the Boonta Eve Podrace to win the prize money that Qui-Gon needs to

buy the spare parts for their damaged starship. In The Phantom Menace,

Anakin is nothing but innocence and goodness. No moral ambiguities here. As

a young man, however, Anakin becomes Darth Vader; by A New Hope, he is, as

Obi-Wan puts it, "more machine now than man, twisted and $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) =\left(1\right)$ evil." No moral

ambiguities there either.

We might then expect to see some signs of ambiguity in the interim.

But in Attack of the Clones, we never see the kind boy we met on Tatooine.

Not once during the entire movie does he show basic compassion. He's rude,

arrogant, and ungrateful. While he talks about the respect he has for $\mbox{Obi-}$

Wan's wisdom, he never acts as if he believes that Obi-Wan has anything to

teach him. He ignores Obi-Wan's explicit instructions at every opportunity,

he picks a fight with Obi-Wan in front of Padme to prove his loyalty to her

over his teacher, he refuses to listen to ${\tt Obi-Wan}$ while chasing ${\tt Zam}$ ${\tt Wesell}$,

and he abandons his mission to Naboo to look after his own personal

affairs. His smarmy resistance to Obi-Wan's teachings turns his otherwise

patient and kind master into a hectoring nag. His pursuit of his love for

Padme, while understandable, jeopardizes not only their careers, but also

their lives-not to mention the lives of those who find themselves in the

path of their recklessness.

The only step he takes that seems selfless is his attempt to save $\mbox{Obi-}$

Wan on Geonosis, but his actions are ill-conceived and rash, an ill-advised

attempt to make up for abandoning his post earlier. His duty was clearly to

protect his charge, yet he allows Padme to convince him to do what he

himself wants to do.

Once there, he has to be reminded to keep to his $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) =\left$

falls out of their gunship, and he rushes into combat with Count Dooku so

carelessly that he ends up causing unnecessary injuries both to Obi-Wan and

to himself. Most of these actions are thoughtless rather than intentionally

immoral, so we may be inclined to see them as well-intentioned, if

mistaken. Even so, their sheer stupidity makes them morally defective.

The problem is not that he acts on his emotions. Emotions play an

important role in our moral evaluations. The eighteenth-century Scottish

philosopher David Hume even argues, "Morality... is more properly felt

judg'd of."8 Yet even Hume thinks that reason plays an important role in

morality. We need to use our reason to assess the facts properly and to

keep our priorities straight. To act coherently, much less morally, we

can't lose our heads; we have to be able to reflect on what we $\$ are doing.

When people disregard the moral judgments that emerge from $\$ reflection, we

rightly view them as morally flawed. And when they willfully refuse to engage in reflection at all, when they rush to action without any use of their reason, we should judge them similarly. So when Anakin tells Padme, "You are asking me to be rational. That is something I know I cannot do," he is admitting to a great moral failing. If we willfully ignore what reason tells us, we become controlled by every whim of our emotions, and we lose our capacity to make moral decisions. Anakin's recklessness is, then,

Yet all Anakin's reckless actions pale in comparison to what he does to the Sand People who've captured his mother. Even from Naboo, Anakin feels his mother's pain, and he rushes to Tattooine to help her. But when she dies in his arms, he destroys an entire village, the innocent and the guilty alike, out of revenge. It's an act of unspeakable cruelty.

a vice.

Oddly, the horror of this act is downplayed in the movie. Padme only seems to feel sorry for Anakin, reacting little to the depths of the horror. She consoles him and rather lamely insists that "to be angry is to be human." Anakin himself seems to feel sorry for what he has done, but even this apparent regret seems to be more about failing his ideal of a Jedi than about the act itself. indeed, he seems much more upset that he couldn't save his mother, and so vows to be "all-powerful" so that he can "learn to stop people from dying."

We could try to argue that the killings, though horrendous, are at least somewhat morally ambiguous. We can distinguish between dispositions and character traits that lie behind an action and the consequences of the action itself. As Mill puts it, "the motive has nothing to do with the morality of the action, though much to do with the worth of the agent."? We

can then argue that Anakin, by acting out of love for his mother, is acting

from a good disposition. A world in which people love their parents and

their children so much that they are willing to go to great lengths to save

them is a morally better world than one in which people lack such feelings.

People are more likely to develop a strong moral character, and to have

richer lives in general, when they are capable of such great and

unconditional love for others. The development of such attachments is thus

a great moral good. The hatred Anakin feels towards the Sand People, we

could then argue, is a natural outcome of having such a great love. They

have slowly and painfully tortured Shmi, and Anakin reacts passionately and

violently to their brutality. $10 \, \mathrm{So}$, although destroying the Sand People was

wrong, we could argue that Anakin's reaction is a byproduct of a character

trait that is generally virtuous. We could then still think of Anakin as a good person.

What Anakin does, however, can bear no such justification. First,

massacre many for the sake of one is egregiously disproportionate. Indeed,

to kill any innocent person just to save a family member is morally

dubious. We should always "act so that we treat humanity... always as an $\ensuremath{\mathsf{a}}$

end in itself and never as a means only," as the great Prussian philosopher $\,$

Immanuel Kant puts it.11 By sacrificing innocent people to save our loved

one, we are using them merely as tools for our \mbox{own} purposes. We do not

respect them as full human beings with their own goals and values, but as

something expendable whenever they get in our way. Moreover, to do so when

those actions will not even help our loved one treats the $\,$ Sand $\,$ People in

just the way Anakin thinks of them: "They're like animals and I slaughtered

them like animals." Anakin's capacity to treat people as mere beasts is

such a fundamental moral flaw that his capacity for love can't redeem his character.

Second, and more importantly, for all the good it creates, the love of family is not always a good moral motive. Certainly, love is a powerful motive, and it can be difficult to control. In addition, the capacity to love is itself intrinsically good, and it thereby creates a great good in people's lives. Besides being good in its own right, it can also help to generate other goods. It teaches us to look at the world from the point of view of others and to take into account the interests of those outside us.

Yet despite its great potential, love can also be morally selfish.

Han, remember, is a better person because he loves, but his moral perspective is still limited. When we focus our attention exclusively on those we love, we can become blind to the anguish of others. They can cease to exist for us morally. Indeed, too often, we fail to think of outsiders as human at all. The exclusive love of our own families and our own groups is the root cause of the intolerance that leads to too many of the great crimes committed by humanity. So Anakin's love makes his anger understandable, but what he does with that anger is no less horrible because love lies behind it.

Anakin's murder of the Sand People is, then, in no way morally ambiguous. It's simply the first of Anakin's many future acts of barbarity.

We are supposed to see Anakin's actions as a result of his all-too-human love for his mother and hatred for those who harm her, a flaw that will eventually lead him down the path to the Dark Side of the Force. In fact, however, he is far along that path the second he kills those innocent

villagers. Only our (and Padme's) sympathy for Anakin as a character prevents us from seeing that he's already an "agent of evil."

If Anakin as a young man is not morally ambiguous, we could arque, with some justice, that once he becomes Darth Vader he's more ambiquous than we might think. First, Vader's motivations are not entirely bad. asks Luke to join him so that they can destroy the Emperor and rule galaxy together us father and son: "With our combined strength, we can this destructive conflict and bring order to the galaxy." Vader seeks and order for the galaxy, ruled by the wise leadership of a single man perhaps a single family. Here Vader expresses Anakin's earlier sentiment that "we need a system where the politicians sit down and discuss problem, agree what's in the best interest of all the people, and then it." And if people don't agree, he continues, "then they should be made " Even then, it doesn't bother Anakin that such a system sounds like dictatorship: "Well, if it works..." Anakin can be seduced by the Dark Side because although he wants the world to be a better place, he refuses absorb the lessons of his wiser, if less talented, teacher. As a result, doesn't appreciate how naive his view of the world is, and he can't control himself when he confronts the traps-like the one on Tatooine-that Darth

Second, we could argue that Vader is morally ambiguous, because Luke does, after all, feel the good in him. Faced with the torture and the destruction of his own son, he destroys the Emperor instead. What goodness remains allows him to resist the absolute evil of the Emperor, but only when his own son is involved. His motivations in killing the Emperor are not that different from his earlier motivations in killing the Sand People:

Sidious sets for him. His good motives are thus put to evil use.

he acts out of love for a member of his family. But, as we have already

seen, killing others for the sake of a family member is not always-or even

usually-morally praiseworthy. So his motivations don't make his action here

better. What does make it better is that this time at least, he kills only

the guilty, and he does so when it's the only way to save the innocent

person who happens to be his son. The fact that in saving his son, he also

kills the Emperor and helps to destroy the Empire that has tyrannized the

galaxy is an important added bonus. It is, then, a morally good act-even if

the motivations behind it are not entirely praiseworthy. So oddly, at the

end of Return of the jedi, Anakin finally does become a morally ambiguous

figure. He does great good, even if the motivations are not entirely good,

and even if they do not begin to atone for the great evils he has done in his life.

"You Know... What They're Up Against"

Moral ambiguity can appear in a number of surprising places. It

emerges when characters are basically good, but have to learn to get

outside their egoistic tendencies, like Han. It can be found where evil

characters pretend to be good to use the goodness of others $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

like Dooku. It appears not when people with whom we empathize, like Anakin,

do horrific evil, but when good manages to eke its way out of an evil

character, like Vader. Most importantly, it can appear when seemingly easy

decisions, like Lando's, are given their full due.

Most moral decisions we make in our lives are relatively easy. We help

a friend with a project; we give up a concert to see our daughter's

recital; we give directions to a stranger. Few decisions require us to

consider anyone outside a small circle of acquaintances or the strangers

who present themselves to us. These $\;$ decisions $\;$ are $\;$ so $\;$ ordinary $\;$ that we

hardly think of them as moral decisions at all. But the ease with which we

handle most moral situations can leave us ill-prepared to think about the

difficult moral decisions which may confront us and which could prove to be

the crucible of our moral characters.

A rare few of us may be blessed with a strong moral compass that

invariably leads us to the right path, no matter how confusing the signs

might be. The rest of us can only prepare ourselves by thinking about our

possible reactions to many different situations so that we can know how we

should handle ourselves when the time comes. Thinking about it is not

enough, of course, but it's a necessary first step to facing any challenge.

In thinking about the moral ambiguity of the seemingly black-and-white

universe of Star Wars, we can see how morally complex a simple world can

be, and we can begin to prepare for the moral complexities of our own less-

than-simple world.

Part II

"Try Not-Do or Do Not"

Ethics in a Galaxy, Far, Far Away

The Aspiring Jedi's Handbook of Virtue

JUDITH BARAD

So, you'd like to be a Jedi Knight? Surely a good part of the appeal

is the adventure, the excitement, the glory of this undertaking. But wait $\ensuremath{\mathtt{a}}$

minute! When Obi-Wan Kenobi attempts to persuade Yoda to train Luke, the

diminutive Jedi Master objects that Luke isn't a good candidate for

training because all his life he has craved adventure $% \left(1\right) =1$ and excitement. In

Yoda's words, "A Jedi craves not these things." The path to becoming a Jedi

lies within.

Suppose you're not deterred. You still want to be a Jedi Knight just as much as you wanted to the first time you saw Star Wars. As a would-Jedi student, you'll need to have a teacher. Yoda is probably your bet, given his experience. For over eight hundred years, the small, Master has trained Jedi Knights. But having identified a teacher doesn't mean that the leacher will accept you as a student. Being someone's student is a privilege, not an entitlement. Yoda will most likely examine mental attitudes before he accepts or rejects you for training. He will insist that you must have "the deepest commitment, the most serious mind." If you're committed and serious, there Is one more prerequisite that be met before training can commence. You must have the patience to what you begin. The process of becoming a Jedi Knight is definitely quick and easy.

The Old Republic and the Older Republic

If you find these prerequisites within you, it's important to keep the underlying purpose of being a Jedi firmly in mind. The ultimate aims of Jedi are peace and justice. When Obi-Wan first presents Luke Skywalker with a lightsaber, he explains that the Jedi Knights "were the guardians peace and justice in the Old Republic." If we really want to know about "Old Republic" we should turn to Plato's seminal work entitled, oddly enough, The Republic. Plato suggests that an ideal society should train group of virtuous warriors to preserve peace and justice commonwealth. It's true that Plato's Republic doesn't have the galactic proportions we see depicted in Star Wars; but much of Plato's teachings reflected in the Star Wars galaxy. By comparing Plato's notion of a warrior

class to the Jedi Knights and his Republic's Guardians to the Jedi Masters,

we can acquire a richer understanding of the Jedi. With this understanding,

we will be more successful in living our life to the full, just as a Jedi should.

Plato prescribes a long and rigorous period of training, which he

thinks will yield knowledge of goodness and justice. Those who complete

this training successfully, he insists, are fit to guard society for they

will have developed the virtues associated with $\ensuremath{\text{goodness}}$ and $\ensuremath{\text{justice}}.$ A

central feature of virtue ethics is the claim that an action $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right$

and only if it's what a person with a virtuous character would do in the

circumstances. Plato thus emphasizes the development of virtues. An initial

step in the testing that Plato requires is hard physical training for the

future Guardians. However, the purpose of this training is not simply

muscular strength. Rather, it is undertaken to improve the soul, that is,

the mind. Unless you train your body to obey your mental commands, Plato

teaches, you won't be able to have within yourself the necessary power to

drive you forward on the road to even greater mental control over other

things. Proper physical training produces the virtues of courage and $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right$

endurance. But training to the exclusion of $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

make a person may become hard and savage. Just \mbox{glance} at the wrestling

shows on television, like WWE Smackdown!

Just as Plato requires a training program that combines physical and

mental skills, so does Yoda. The training you'll receive will probably be

similar to the training young Luke Skywalker receives from Yoda, since

you're probably nearer his age than younger padawans. Throughout his

training, Luke questions Yoda about good and evil, the Force, and other

concepts important to a Jedi. Likewise, Plato's Republic features a question-and-answer interplay between teacher and students as Socrates's "padawans" question him about justice and injustice, the nature of the Good, and the ideal government.

The first step in the Jedi training Yoda imposes on Luke is intensely physical. Its point is not only to increase his endurance but to provide crash course in Jedi virtues of discipline and persistence. By developing endurance, a Jedi padawan has the capacity to work his way through difficulties despite the frustration inherent in the task. One will to continue striving in the face of seemingly insurmountable obstacles defeat. Endurance, requiring self-control, provides a padawan with ability to struggle over an extended time to achieve their goals. Dagobah, the Jedi Master pushes his young student to the limit. Racing and out of the heavy ground fog with Yoda on his back, Luke is winded as climbs, flips through the air, and leaps over roots. Yet, he endures and continues striving.

A Balancing Act

The next step in Luke's training is to learn physical balance. He stands on his head while Yoda perches on the soles of his feet. Like the other physical exercises, this one also has a predominantly mental objective. It requires such great concentration that nothing can distract him. By maintaining his balance, Luke is in control of himself and the circumstances around him.

Perhaps Plato's padawan, Aristotle, can help us understand the importance of balance. To avoid being overcome by strong emotions, Aristotle recommends that we have the right balance of $% \left(1\right) =0$ virtue—the "Golden

Mean." Here, all actions can be evaluated on a scale of excess to

deficiency. Virtue is "the mean" or the intermediate between excess and

deficiency. It's a balanced action responding to a particular situation at

the right time, in relation to the right people, with the right motive, and

in the right way. For instance, you can fear something either too much or

too little. Fearing too much may lead to cowardice, as when Chewie ran from

the Dianoga in A New Hope. Fearing too little, us was the case when ${\tt Anakin}$

rushed headlong to confront

Count Dooku in Attack of the Clones, may lead to rashness, both

undesirable traits. The balanced trait, that is, the virtue between fearing

too much or too little, is virtue.

Suppose you face an ethical dilemma and fear making a decision because

you have only incomplete information regarding the circumstances. You want

to make the best decision possible and so try to collect as $\ensuremath{\mathsf{much}}$

information as you can. But, in reality, that's often not possible. Saddled

with incomplete information, you may fear making a decision that might end

up being wrong. But perhaps it's worse not to attempt to find a solution to

the dilemma than to risk making a mistake, and so you rationally conclude

that you shouldn't fear making such a mistake. Reason can help remove

excess fear about being wrong, as well as inspire a proper respect for the

gravity of the situation. By balancing too much fear against too little

fear, you can attain the virtue of courage.

We see this illustrated near the end of Luke's training period.

Sensing that his friends are in pain and suffering, he asks Yoda, "Will

they die?" But Yoda can't see their fate. Luke is in anguish. Both of his

teachers, Yoda and Obi-Wan, counsel him to wait before going to their aid.

If he decides to help them, he risks possible danger to himself. Yet if he

decides not to help them, they may die. Even though Luke has incomplete

information and is aware that he may be mistaken, he arrives at a decision,

one that he has not reached lightly. He courageously decides to help his

friends.

So suppose you fear skydiving, but you learn to overcome your fear. If

you decide to go ahead and skydive because you are essentially a thrill-

seeker, would this count as a courageous act? While Aristotle would applaud

Luke's decision to help his friends as a courageous act, he would probably

label your decision to satisfy your thrill-seeking desire as a rash act

rather than a courageous one. What's the difference? Well, for Aristotle,

the act of confronting danger or risk becomes courageous if and only if

both decision and just cause enter the picture. The skydiving decision

lacks just cause, which is essential to a courageous act. In contrast,

Luke's decision, reached after serious consideration, involves a just

cause-the lives of his friends.

Yet the very notion of fear seems to oppose the Jedi teaching $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1$

core. Yoda tells Anakin that he's not fit to begin training because of the

great fear the young boy feels. The Jedi Master warns, "Fear is the path to

the Dark Side. Fear leads to anger, anger leads to hate, hate leads to

suffering." Yoda also warns Luke about anger, fear, and aggression.

Yoda mean a Jedi should never experience fear and anger? His words could be

interpreted in this way. But if we think about it, although the virtue of

courage and the emotion of fear may seem to be mutually exclusive, they're

actually quite compatible. The truly courageous person not only fears what

she should when there's a reasonable basis for fear, but she can also stand

up to fear and confront risk or danger. This is also true of anger,

provided that anger is guided by reason. When Luke battles his father for

the last time, as the Emperor goads Luke to "use your aggressive feelings"

and to "let the hate flow through you," he controls his anger when he

realizes it will lead him to the Dark Side. He reasons that the only way to

destroy the Dark Side is to renounce it. Yet his anger, controlled by

reason, is what gives him the courage to stand up to the evil, powerful

Emperor. Throwing his lightsaber aside, he says with resolve, "I'll never

turn to the Dark Side. You've failed, your highness. I am a Jedi, like my

father before me."

Not only is "righteous" anger compatible with courage, but it can also

result in acting justly-another virtue. Feeling angry about someone's

unfair treatment could lead you to take positive action to correct this

treatment. For the Jedi, it's important to stop violent and abusive

behavior, and to defend the innocent against assault. Yet, if possible, a

Jedi should use nonviolent means to accomplish this. It is true, now, that

your emotions enable you to $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

reasoning about a situation. So if controlled by reason, emotions can

actually fuel the kind of virtuous action a Jedi should engage in.

It's thus unlikely that Yoda's admonitions about fear and anger should

be interpreted as meaning that a Jedi never feels those emotions. Rather,

he probably means that a Jedi never acts from fear and anger. A $\,$ Jedi acts

when reason is in control, when he's "calm, at peace, passive." In fact, as

Yoda tells Luke, only a calm mind can distinguish the good $\,$ side $\,$ from the

bad. In contrast, acting from an agitated condition clouds one's mind from

knowing right from wrong. Anakin acts from uncontrolled linger when he sees

his mother die at the hands of the Sand People, He confesses to Padme that,

in retaliation, he killed behave in these ways. They will rarely be

influenced by conflicting self-interests or swayed by temptations, as $\operatorname{Obi-}$

Wan wasn't at all tempted to join Dooku to obtain release from captivity.

When Obi-Wan refuses to join the Dark Side, he displays the virtue of

integrity. Having integrity, he can discern what is right from wrong and

act on what he discerns, even at personal cost. Just as the former prisoner

in Plato's Cave Allegory at last sees the Good, the successful Jedi must

see the good in others, a recognition which motivates forgiveness and

compassion. These two virtues drive out uncontrolled anger and hatred so

that the Dark Side is no longer a threat. Forgiveness frees a Jedi to

overlook transgressions made against him so that he no longer needs to

carry around the burdens of resentment and hostility. Even without saying

the words "I forgive you" to his father, Luke's forgiveness of his father

is clear as Vader lies dying in his son's arms.

The Right Kind of Love

The other virtue that's generated by seeing the $\mbox{\em Good}$ is compassion.

Anakin, in an intimate moment with Padme, defines compassion as

"unconditional love" which is "central to a Jedi's life." There's a huge

difference between unconditional love and erotic or romantic love. In the

scene where Anakin defines compassion for Padme, she's beginning to fall in

love with him. Aware that he's very attracted to her, she asks Anakin, "Are

you allowed to love? I thought that was forbidden for a Jedi." The young

Jedi responds with his definition of compassion, distinguishing it from

attachment and possession, which are both forbidden to a Jedi. The Jedi

approve of compassion, a higher and more universal form of love, while

attachment to a particular individual is frowned upon. Personal attachment

to someone or something is an intense emotion, which can lead to fear of

losing what one is attracted to, and we know already where fear leads;

compassion is a virtue. More precisely, compassion is a selfless love,

involving a deep, cherishing concern for each individual as having

intrinsic value. That is, individuals are valued for their own sake,

regardless of their capacity to achieve anything else.

Plato also seeks to prevent the Guardians from having private

attachments and possessions, which might conflict with wholehearted

devotion to the public welfare. Since the Guardians are servants of the

Republic, they should have no temptations to neglect the public interest;

they should have no land, houses, or money of their own. This approach

avoids the corruption and conflicts that can happen when it's possible for

authorities to place their own good above the public good.

Plato maintains that the virtuous life is much more satisfying than

personal relationships. It is so much more real than romantic attachments

that those who live it will lose a great $\mbox{ deal }$ of the $\mbox{ ordinary person's}$

interest in sexual satisfaction. The very intensity of a quardian's

universal love or compassion will make him less dependent upon particular

attachments. The Guardians devote as much of themselves as they can to

public service. By forbidding romantic attachments, Plato hopes to free the

Guardians from the competition and jealousy of these exclusive

relationships. More importantly, without romantic attachments,

Guardians won't be tempted to prefer such private interests to those of the

entire community. We see how Anakin almost puts his love for Padme above

the safety of the entire galaxy when she falls out of a gunship chasing

Count Dooku. Aware that he may be expelled from the Jedi Order, Anakin

wants to rescue her, even if it means that Dooku might escape and the Clone

Wars expand beyond Geonosis. Only when Obi-Wan reminds him that in such

circumstances Padme would fulfill her duty does Anakin agree to fulfill

his.

But does compassion for others necessarily require people to sacrifice

personal attachments to concern for the larger society? Compassion is at

the root of virtuous conduct; it is the notion that everyone counts. But to

say that is to say that you count as well. And an individual may feel more

fulfilled when allowed to love particular others and to be loved by them in

return. At the end of Luke's training on Dagobah, he experiences an

internal conflict between his commitment to becoming a Jedi and his loyalty

to his friends, whom he senses are suffering. Loyalty is a Jedi virtue for

clearly the Jedi should be loyal to one another, to their ideals, and to

the Republic. Yet loyalty also entails an unwavering commitment to the

people you value. It involves the subordination of your private interests

in favor of their more pressing needs. Not only would

Luke have been disloyal if he had ignored his closest friends in their

distress, but he would also have lacked compassion. And it is the virtue of

compassion that enables him to see through Vader to the good within him and

to bring that goodness out. There's nothing inherently unethical about

living in a way that enhances one's personal relationships. But neither

does the advancement of personal relationships allow one to $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

well-being of others or ignore duties. So perhaps the Jedi Order should

allow family life, but prevent it from interfering with public duty.

Is Brainwashing Ethically Sanitary?

One more problem about Jedi training requires some reflection. Part of Luke's training is to learn to control objects with his mind. First, levitates a small rock, and then his sunken X-wing fighter. Now if exercise is meant simply to learn concentration, there would be nothing wrong with it. Concentration, in itself, is a valuable skill and necessary one for a Jedi Knight. But, eventually a Jedi progresses from mentally controlling inanimate objects to being able to mentally control "weak-minded" individuals. The Jedi can use mind control to suggestions in weak minds, making them do things they wouldn't ordinarily do. For instance, at Mos Eisley Spaceport a trooper demands Obi-Wan's and Luke's identification, but speaking in a very controlled voice and with slight wave of his hand, Obi-Wan makes the trooper think that he doesn't need to see their identification. A much younger Obi-Wan used mind control to convince a young drug pusher that he doesn't need to sell "death sticks" (which look suspiciously like cigarettes) any more and that he should home and rethink his life. Now using mind control over others is a kind brainwashing, a practice most people think of as horrible. But is practice justifiable if it's used for a good purpose? The problem anyone who brainwashes or controls the mind of another believes they doing so for a good purpose. Can Plato help us out here?

Plato sympathizes with the desire to influence weak-minded people.

However, rather than directly controlling the minds of such people by the power of his own will, he uses the power of his thought to construct a myth designed to con-trol the beliefs of the weak-minded by appealing to their imagination. The myth is this: the earth gives birth to people, so that all

citizens are born of the same soil and must protect the land that is their

mother. Additionally, some people have gold in their souls (the $\operatorname{Guardians}$),

some have silver (the warriors), and some have iron on bronze (everyone

else). The type of metal that courses through each person will determine

the role they will play in the Republic. Plato suggests this influential

myth in the interest of a higher purpose, namely, the unity of society.

Unity is achieved when people prove that they can bear responsibility and

give up self-interest in order to fulfill the common good. Most people

won't understand that it's important for each individual to subordinate

their self-interests to the common good. But patriotism is easily

inculcated by careful control of information, and it serves the same

purpose of producing unity in society. Plato thinks that using a myth to

mentally manipulate the weak-minded will encourage the kind of allegiance

to the Republic that people usually feel toward their family members. So,

when the Jedi use their more direct mental manipulation for the good of the $\ensuremath{^{\text{the}}}$

Republic, whether to fulfill a mission or reform a drug pusher, Plato would

certainly validate this.

Also, in Plato's Cave Allegory, the people who carry the objects that

project the shadows on the cave wall are manipulating the minds of the

chained prisoners. The weak-minded are always being mentally manipulated by

other people. Since they dislike thinking for themselves or are unable to

do so, they turn to others to figure things out for them: family members, $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right$

authority figures, the media, the rich and the powerful-you know, the Watto

or Jabba the Hutt types who, interestingly, are immune to Jedi "mind

tricks." The weak-minded uncritically accept what such people want them to

believe. They're being mentally manipulated, although they're unaware of

it. Now it's reasonable to believe that the overwhelming majority of mind-

con-trrollers have their own selfish interests at heart, $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left$

common good, when they put thoughts in the minds of others. Since weak-

minded people desire others to figure things out for litem, and since there

will always be people willing to do so, isn't it better that the

controllers be people who authentically care about the common $\ensuremath{\operatorname{good}}$ rather

than people who seek to advance their own vested interests?

The Jedi Model

Despite the problem of controlling others' thoughts, the $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right)$ virtues the

Jedi possess make them great models to aspire to. As we've seen, in

eyes of an ancient Greek master and his padawan, the Jedi would likely

appear courageous, loyal, compassionate, just, and forgiving. They have

endurance (otherwise referred to as perseverance), are mentally focused,

and have a healthy humility. Also, the Jedi have honor, they live by a code

or a set of principles, and find such value in so doing that they count it

as a basis of self-worth. For a Jedi, honor is closely connected to one's

role as a Jedi Knight as defined by the Jedi Code. Further, the Jedi

regularly manifest nobility, a desire for $\mbox{\sc moral}$ excellence that $\mbox{\sc permits}$

them to overcome personal interests in favor or some purpose larger than

themselves. They show great stature of character by holding to the virtues

that define them. Nobility involves admiration of the virtues of others and $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

a desire to realize one's potential or, as the Army used to say, "Be all

that you can be." Such admiration for the virtues of others and desire to

bring out what is best in oneself are part and parcel of Jedi training. Due

to their desire to perfect their own virtue, noble persons serve as good

role models for others. Having the tendency to influence others, the noble

person provides a persuasive example of what can be done in the service of goodness, peace and justice, which are, after all, the ultimate aims of being a Jedi Knight.

Being a Jedi certainly involves a lot of hard work. Fortunately, the various Star Wars movies have showed you how to awaken your "inner" Jedi.
Just as fortunately, a couple of ancient Greek philosophers shed even more light on the process. Developing the kind of character a Jedi possesses may be far more rewarding to you in the long run than learning how to wield a lightsaber. So if you're still serious and have the commitment to be a Jedi, it would be wise to follow the examples of virtuous character illustrated in Star Wars and explicated by Plato and Aristotle.

"A Wretched Hive of Scum and Villainy": Star Wars and the $\,$ Problem of $\,$ Evil

CHRISTOPHER M. BROWN

Why do bad things happen to good people? This perennial question has

been especially troubling for philosophically inclined men $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

believe that some all-powerful, perfectly good being rules the universe.

Why? Because a perfectly good being that has control of all things would

presumably have created a world where good people are rewarded for their

virtue and evil people are punished for their crimes. Yet good people often

go unrewarded for their good deeds, and some even suffer terribly in this $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right$

life. Meanwhile, bad people prosper. They even manage to attain the most

prominent places of power. If goodness is more powerful than evil, why is

there so much evil in the world? Could it be that evil is actually stronger?

In The Empire Strikes Back, Luke Skywalker raises this very question

while listening to one of Master Yoda's early lessons on the Force. Yoda

warns Luke about the Dark Side, the path that Darth Vader has followed.

Luke asks Yoda, "Is the Dark Side stronger?" Yoda responds: "No... No

[softer]... No [even softer yet]. Quicker, easier, more seductive."

Although Yoda answers Luke's question in the negative, his delivery

suggests that Yoda Is not certain, but at most only wistfully hopeful, that

good will overcome evil in the end.

Intelligent attempts to make sense of the apparent power that evil has

over goodness in this life are bound to lead to more basic questions about

evil. Why do bad things happen at all? What is the ultimate origin of evil?

And what is evil, anyway?

Something Wicked This Way Comes. But From Whence Does It Come?

There is genuine evil in the universe. This is obvious to most of us.

Philosophers of religion-those who try to make sense of, support, or refute

the claims of world religions-traditionally have distinguished two

varieties of evil: natural evil and moral evil. A natural evil is an event

that occurs in the universe that is painful, unpleasant, or destructive and

does not occur as a direct result of someone's choosing to do what is

harmful. Examples of natural evils are Luke's being attacked by a wampa on

Hoth and bigger fish eating smaller fish on Naboo. Although it is good for

a wampa to eat, Luke isn't too happy about the prospect of being on the

menu that particular day! And though it isn't morally wrong for one fish to

eat another fish, because the destruction of a living organism is something

bad-at least for the fish that's eaten-philosophers call it a
"natural"

evil. In contrast to natural evil, moral evil results from someone's

choosing to do what's harmful to either one's self or another. Grand $\operatorname{\mathsf{Moff}}$

Tarkin's ordering the destruction of Alderaan and Darth Maul's murdering

Qui-Gon Jinn are prime examples of moral evils.

But why do we live in a universe full of natural and moral evils?

Maybe any serious talk of goodness in the world implies that there is evil

in the world too. Perhaps the relation between good and evil is analogous

to the relation between light and darkness. Darkness is the absence of

light and light is the absence of darkness. In a world of perpetual light-

where one would have no conception at all of darkness-the word 'light'

would have a meaning totally different from what it has for us who dwell in

alternating periods of light and darkness. Indeed, we might think that the

words light' and 'dark' would have no meaning for us at all in such a

context. If good and evil are opposites in the same way as light and

darkness, then in order for us to have any real experience that we might

label 'good,' we must also have genuine experience of evil.

As Qui-Gon Jinn reminds Masters Yoda and Windu, the ancient Jedi

prophecies speak of "one who will bring balance to the Force." Harmony in

the universe will not be brought about by destroying evil. Indeed, if good

and evil are opposites, it may be impossible to destroy evil in the

universe without also destroying the possibility of real goodness. The best

state of affairs for the universe would then involve keeping the Dark Side

in check, or "balanced" against the Light Side of the Force. There would be

no need for Luke's courageous and selfless actions to save his friend

Solo if it weren't for Jabba the Hutt's greed and inordinate desire for

revenge. Nor would Luke have displayed the kind of compassion implicit in

his refusal to kill his own father if Darth Vader hadn't been seduced by

the Dark Side of the Force. There would be no cause for the kind of heroism $\ \ \,$

displayed by the likes of Princess Leia, Han Solo, and Lando Calrissian if

there were no evil Empires to rebel against. It may be that the Dark Side

serves a good and necessary purpose: there would be no genuine goodness in

the universe without the Dark Side as an impetus for noble action. ${\tt A}$

universe without villainy-and therefore without heroism-would be morally

lifeless, inert.

We know evil existed a long time ago, in a galaxy far, far away. But

has evil always existed? If evil came into existence at some point in

history, what was its cause? It couldn't come from what's truly good, for

if goodness gives rise to evil then it wouldn't really be good in the first

place. It makes more sense to say that, like goodness, evil is simply a

basic feature of the universe and has no cause-it has always existed along

with goodness. Western philosophy offers this kind of dualistic account of

good and evil in both non-religious and religious forms.

The ancient Greek philosopher Plato articulates perhaps the most $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left$

influential non-religious expression of a dualism of good and evil. He

argues that the existence of a world such as ours - a world that on the

whole is quite harmonious and orderly - must have a maker, a divine

craftsman, and a plan that's followed in constructing the universe. $\!1\!$

However, any construction project requires more than simply a design and ${\tt a}$

builder. It also requires raw materials. For Plato, matter is the ultimate

raw material of the divine craftsman's building project that is our

universe, much as life forms the basis for the existence of the $\,$ Force In

the Star Wars galaxy.

Yoda didn't create the raw materials from which his hut on Dagobah was $\ensuremath{\mathsf{N}}$

constructed; the tree, sticks, and mud that he used to build his home pre-

existed the finished product. Plato thinks the divine craftsman, as

powerful and perfect as he is, works under the same basic restrictions.

Although there hasn't always been a visible universe with planets, living

things, and machines in existence, matter, the "stuff" out of which all of

these particular things are made, has always been around.

The fact that matter is uncreated also explains why the world can't be

perfectly harmonious and orderly according to Plato. Even if the divine

craftsman necessarily creates the best world he can, this doesn't mean that

such a world is an absolutely perfect world, since the divine craftsman

must create the visible world out of matter, and the matter $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

the world is fashioned isn't perfect but is by its nature impure,

disordered, and discordant. Let's assume that when Yoda did anything - even

something as mundane as building a home out of sticks and mud-he did a

great job. But even a home built by a Jedi Master is not completely

impervious to decay at the hands of the forces of nature over time.

Similarly, the visible world as a whole-with all of its evils-is the best

that the divine craftsman could manage, given the limitations inherent in

the raw material he's got to work with.

The Platonic tradition in Western philosophy has often considered

matter to be not just limiting, but positively evil. Since matter is

inherently evil, so are the individual bodies composed of it. Platonists

look with suspicion on activities associated with the body, such as eating

and drinking for pleasure, as well as sexual activity. Our bodies distract

us from the more worthy pursuits of thinking and doing morally virtuous

deeds. As Plato, in the voice of Socrates, remarks, "So long as we have the

body accompanying our reason in its inquiries, so long as our souls are

befouled by this evil admixture, we shall assuredly never fully possess

that which we desire, to wit truth."2 In addition, we often identify

ourselves with our bodies, when in fact, we're really spirits trapped in

bodies. As Yoda teaches Luke: "Luminous beings are we... [Yoda pinches

Luke's shoulder]... not this crude matter."

In the Platonic tradition evil has its ultimate source in matter, and

this goes for moral evil as well as natural evil, since all moral evil

originates in excessive attachment to the body. The $\ \mbox{good}$ person isn't a

slave to the body and its passions, and so she isn't excessively afraid of

death. Obi-Wan's last lesson for Luke comes when he allows himself to be

killed by Darth Vader-thereby freeing himself from the confines of the body

- rather than have Luke watch him attack in order to $\,$ kill. Obi-Wan warns

Vader, "You can't win, Darth. If you strike me down, I shall become more

powerful than you can possibly imagine." Obi-Wan's death allows him to be

will have a power that Vader can't imagine-since Vader thinks, like his

master the Emperor, that real power comes with the $\mbox{ability}$ to $\mbox{manipulate}$

one's physical surroundings, particularly through the threat of death. For

Yoda, Obi-Wan, and Plato, true power is spiritual power-having control of

one's own self. The Emperor, by contrast, teaches his disciples to use the

Force and channel bodily passions such as fear, anger, and hate in order to

acquire power over nature and bodily death. As Anakin confesses to Padme

after taking his first steps toward the Dark Side, "I should be $\lceil all - \rceil$

powerful]. Someday I will be... I will even learn to stop people from

dying." By contrast, Yoda teaches that "a Jedi uses the Force for knowledge

and defense, never for attack" and he accepts the reality of bodily death:

"Twilight is upon me, and soon night must fall. That is the way of things..

. the way of the Force."

"One All-Powerful Force Controlling Everything"

Many people don't accept the Platonic view that God couldn't have made

a physical universe without evil because it conflicts with their belief

that God is the omnipotent (all-powerful) cre-ator of the universe. On the

other hand, the presence of evil in the world is often cited as evidence

that there is no God, at least not a perfectly good and all-powerful one

As Han Solo says to Luke in A New Hope, "Kid, I've flown from one side of

this galaxy to the other. I've seen a lot of strange stuff, but I've never

Seen anything to make me believe that there's one all-powerful Force

controlling everything."

One of the most important religious philosophers to have $\operatorname{Grappled}$ with

the question of the origin of evil is the fourth-cen-tury Christian

philosopher, St. Augustine. Although Augustine was. raised as

"traditional" (Christian, he did not fully accept the traditional form of

the Christian faith until around thirty years of age. In $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right)$ fact, Augustine

spent much of his earlier life as a member of a gnostic Christian sect

known as the Manichees.

The Manichees accept two Platonic ideas about evil: evil finds its

primary locus in bodily existence and evil is a necessary feature of the

universe. Thus, like Plato, the Manichees are dualists about the existence

of good and evil: both good and evil have always existed in the universe-

goodness doesn't come from evil and evil doesn't originate from something

good. However, whereas Plato traces the origin of evil to the universe's being material, the Manichees locate it in the will of a single person.

The Manichees see the whole history of the universe as one long, cosmic struggle between the forces of good and evil. Each of these forces has a kind of divinity associated with it: a good God of light and spirit, and an evil God of darkness and flesh. Personifying evil is one way of explaining why there is moral evil in the universe. Star Wars is replete with examples of such personifications: Darth Vader, the Emperor, Darth Maul, the Emperor's Royal Guards, and so on. The Manichees think "the evil that men do" can ultimately be traced back to the evil God, a mastermind of all evil who is evil by his very nature; we might say that such a person is "evil incarnate."

One of the skeptical questions that the Manichees raise against traditional Christianity is this: If God is all-powerful and perfectly good, then why or how is there any evil in the world? A perfectly good God would not want to create evil in the first place and an all-powerful God could prevent evil from coming into existence. But there is evil in the universe. So God is not both perfectly good and all-powerful as traditional Christians suppose. This argument against the existence of God-at least the existence of a perfectly good and all-powerful divinity-is known as "the problem of evil." Since the Manichees, like Plato, deny that the good God of the universe is all-powerful, they don't have to worry about the problem of evil.

The Manichees, however, are left with a problem (or two) of their own.

If one lets go of the idea that God is all-powerful, what reason is there to believe that God is more powerful than the forces of darkness? Might it

not be that evil is stronger than goodness, as often appears to be the case $\frac{1}{2}$

in our universe and to the characters in Star Wars? Recall Luke's question to Yoda,

"Is the Dark Side stronger?" and Yoda's negative (yet tentative)

reply: "No... No [softer]... No [even softer yet]. Quicker, easier, more

seductive." There's also Vader's constant assertion of "the power of the

Dark Side." Even if the Dark Side of the Force isn't stronger than the

Light Side as Yoda supposes, it might be that the Light Side has no real

advantage over the Dark Side either. Bad things happen to good people and

many of these bad things will never eventually lead to anything $\ensuremath{\mathsf{good}}$. One

reason that religious believers defend God's omnipotence is that an all-

powerful God can redeem the evil that occurs in this life by $\mbox{ drawing from }$

it more valuable goods. For example, a good person becomes even better as a

result of suffering pain, whether psychological or physical. Why? She

learns to better empathize with others who suffer. She more clearly

realizes what's really important in life: not the pursuit of pleasure, but

serving others. But this brings us back to the problem of evil. Why is

there evil in the first place if God is omnipotent? Augustine argues that

evil's presence in the universe is directly caused by the free $\,$ choices of

God's creatures and not by God's direct choice. Human beings are created

with free will, and (unfortunately) many of us have willingly chosen to do

evil instead of remaining steadfast in choosing to do good. Although God

could have prevented evil's actual presence in the universe by choosing not

to create a universe at all (or by choosing to create a universe without

creatures who have the ability to choose between good and evil), a universe

with free creatures (even free creatures that do evil) is better than $\ensuremath{\mathtt{a}}$

universe that contains only mindless automatons programmed to always do

 ${\tt good.3}$ This is why ${\tt God}$ created the universe, even a universe that carries

with it the real possibility of becoming tainted with evil. But Augustine

recognizes that simply saying that creatures have free choice doesn't fully

solve the problem of evil:

Where then does evil come from since the $\ensuremath{\operatorname{good}}$ $\ensuremath{\operatorname{God}}$ made everything

good? Certainly the greatest and supreme Good made lesser goods; yet the

Creator and all he created are good. What then is (he origin of evil? Is it

that the matter from which he made things was somehow evil? He gave it form

and order, but did he leave in it an element which he could \mbox{not} transform

into good? If so, why?

Was he powerless to turn and transform all matter so that no $\operatorname{\mathsf{evil}}$

remained, even though God is omnipotent?4 Augustine believes the answer to

the last question is "no." Unlike Plato's divine craftsman, Augustine's God

created the whole universe out of nothing. This means for him there was no

pre-existing stuff out of which the physical universe was formed. Evil in

this world can't be traced back to defective matter for Augustine, for

matter isn't inherently evil but good, since it too has its source in the

perfectly good Creator of the universe.

"If Once You Start Down the Dark Path..."

Why did Anakin turn to the Dark Side? It's not as easy as it first

appears to make sense of such a transformation. Did Anakin choose to

to the Dark Side, so that he is ultimately responsible for his "fall from

grace"? Or did the devil (the Emperor) make him do it? If the Emperor

ultimately responsible for Anakin's turning to the Dark Side, then we may

have found answers to such questions. But we're still left with the

question of the Emperor's own allegiance to the Dark Side. Does the Emperor

represent an incarnation of evil? Is he really just a personification of

the Dark Side of the Force itself? Maybe the Emperor never turned to the

Dark Side but rather is inherently evil. The Emperor would then be "evil

incarnate": he isn't only evil himself but provides the ultimate

explanation for why there are other (less-powerful) evil persons in that

galaxy far, far away. This would be evil in true Manichean fashion.

On the other hand, if the Emperor was himself once turned by another-

imagine that he too was once some venerable Sith Lord's apprentice-we might

want to know who turned the Emperor's master. Surely not every evil person

could have been turned by another. There must be an end to the chain of

evil persons that culminates in at least one first seducer, some servant of

the Dark Side who either is evil by his very nature (as the Manichees think

of the evil God) or else was once good but turned himself to evil.

Augustine rejects the Manichean explanation of evil because he

believes that the supremely good God creates all beings in the universe and

so no creature is inherently evil. Instead, since rational creatures such

as the Emperor, Darth Maul, and Darth Vader have free will, each one of

them is ultimately responsible for their own turn to the Dark Side. Obi-Wan $\,$

hints at this when he says: "Vader was seduced by the Dark Side of the

Force." For we typically think that every seduction requires two willing

participants: the seducer and the one seduced.

Let's assume that Anakin Skywalker is responsible in this way for his

turn to the Dark Side. Factors external to Anakin may still have an

influence on his choice: the Emperor's temptations, Anakin's desires for

Padme, his mother's death at the hands of the Sand People, and his

conflicted relationship with Obi-Wan certainly all go some distance towards

making sense of his fall. But Anakin did not have to turn to the Dark Side

as a result of these events. Anakin made choices in all of these contexts

that he knew were evil; he didn't have to make such choices. As Anakin

confesses to Padme after slaughtering a tribe of Sand People, "I'm jedi. $\ensuremath{\text{I}}$

know I'm better than this."

But why do otherwise good people do bad things in the first place?

Augustine is particularly perplexed by this question. If God is the

perfectly good and all-powerful creator of the universe, how could one of

God's good creatures turn to evil? According to Christian tradition, the

original sin is pride: wanting to find oneself in a place of honor higher

than one deserves. Indeed, pride appears to be Anakin's original sin too.

He thinks he doesn't need Obi-Wan as a master, when it's obvious that Obi-

Wan has much to teach the young padawan. Anakin chooses to begin thinking

of himself as better than Obi-Wan, even though in some way he knows

isn't. In a moment of unguarded anger, Anakin says to Padme: "It's all Obi-

Wan's fault. He's jealous. He's holding me back!"

The question of the origin of evil is no $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left$

since for them evil has always existed in the form of I he $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

this Manichean view-as Augustine began to'see as a young man-has the

problematic consequence that people aren't really responsible for their

actions. Why does Anakin turn to the Dark Side? The Manichean answer: "The $\ensuremath{\text{"The}}$

emperor made him do it!" But Augustine wants to maintain that we're free

and morally responsible for our actions. Anakin is ultimately responsible

for his turn to the Dark Side. The origin of moral evil in Anakin is ${\tt Anakin}$

himself and his own pride. Much the same could be said of the $\operatorname{Emperor}$,

Darth Maul, and Jabba the Hutt. A creature that freely wills to do evil is

the first cause of moral evil in that creature. Therefore, there are as

many causes of moral evil in the universe as there $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

freely willed to do evil.

The Fate of Evil after the Overthrow of the Empire

Does the following plot-line for a Hollywood movie sound familiar?

Hero emerges. Hero shows promise in battling evil, but suffers some

temporary setback because of a lack of knowledge and experience. Finally,

hero blossoms in a way that surpasses all hopes, and everyone-except the

villain, of course-lives happily ever after. And at least for a while, we

as movie-goers are lost in the possibility that we too might one day live

happily ever after. That evil can be roundly defeated is an assumption

driving almost every $\operatorname{Hollywood}$ movie (not to mention some great works of

literature).

The Star Wars saga has its Hollywood ending too. We're left with the

distinct impression at the end of Return of the jedi that the Dark Side has

been vanquished by the Jedi once and for all. Not only is the Emperor

overthrown, but Luke has refused to do what his father and so many others

had done before him: give in to the temptation to use the Force to serve

the darker side of our nature. He's done what others could (or would) not

do. The film ends with nothing less than Anakin Skywalker's own redemption,

largely inspired by Luke's filial love and devotion. Although three of the

six Star Wars films end with a victory celebration, there's something

different about the party on Endor. After all, consider who shows up: Obi-

Wan, Yoda, and Anakin, complete in their other-worldly, luminescent attire.

5 Without explicitly saying so, Return of the jedi leaves the viewer with

the distinct impression that "everyone lived happily ever after."

Perhaps films that intend to entertain must have their Hollywood endings. An epic like Star Wars would seem incomplete without it. But maybe there is some deeper significance in the universal human desire-codified in the stories we choose to tell ourselves-that everything will turn out alright in the end. Although the young and selfish Han Solo can't quite believe it, perhaps there is some "all-powerful Force controlling everything."

Will we always be at the mercy of evil and its effects? If evil is а necessary part of reality-the "flipside" of goodness, so to speak-then answer to this question must be "yes." Evil will always be with us, least as a very real possibility. The Emperor may be dead and all may well, but somewhere out there another Emperor-like figure already scheming and angling for power. And there will always be plenty of Anakin Skywalkers in the world-persons of great talent and potential who could, any moment, fall from grace and give in to the Dark Side's temptation believe that power is more important than moral purity. If evil has nature envisioned by Plato and the Manichees, then the most that we reasonably hope for are longer periods of time when the Dark Side lies dormant.

Imagine that the fall of good and the rise of evil is something inevitable—that evil is really a necessary feature of the universe. If this is the case, one might well wonder, what's the point of fighting evil at all, if it can't be completely defeated? Can we really be expected to fight evil without any hope of victory in the end? What's so good (for me) about being good? Providing satisfactory answers to these questions is at least one reason philosophers such as Augustine think it's important to defend

the notion that God exists and is omnipotent. Human beings have a need to

believe that everything will turn out alright in the end. Augustine's

defense of the existence of a perfectly good and all-powerful Creator is

one important and influential philosophical attempt to show that the human

desire for closure in The saga that is our universe is a well-founded one.

"Be Mindful of the Living Force": Environmental Ethics in Star Wars ELIZABETH F. COOKE

A long time ago, in a galaxy far, far away, good and evil looked

remarkably similar to the good and evil we see in our world today. Of

course, most of the species, planetary systems, and technological gadgets $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +$

are foreign to us living in the twenty-first century, but the basic values

of democracy, equality, and justice are the same. And the epic hero, the

Jedi Knight, shares the same characteristics of the warrior hero in Western

culture since the Homeric Age. He's a brave and skilled fighter devoted to

a just cause, and, above all, a master over his mind and body. These common

values at play in Star Wars allow the story to speak to us, despite such an

unfamiliar backdrop.

But something else comes to light when the backdrop involves

intergalactic travel, the power of the Force, Death Stars, the Dagobah

System, Wookiees, Ewoks, and Gungans. We find that the Star Wars galaxy

reveals a rich approach to environmental ethics-one quite relevant for

issues in our own world. Environmental ethics is a branch of philosophy

which uses ethical theories to solve very practical matters concerning

animals, plants, and the environment as a whole. Now the environmental

ethic at work in Star Wars is probably not readily apparent. After all, the

Rebel Alliance concerns itself with only the humanist values of democracy

and freedom. And the Jedi Knights, guardians of peace and justice,

exemplars of all that is good, don't seem all that concerned for animals or

the environment. What set of values then can account for restoring balance

to the Force which somehow includes all the different creatures, cultures,

and planets? This issue requires our attention to the fact that the \mbox{Force}

is indeed a living Force. And here, as Yoda would say, the answer to our

question, we will find.

environment.

Wookiees and Mynocks and Hutts, Oh My!

Environmental ethics is concerned with the proper relationship between

humans and their environment. Generally it asks what our responsibilities

are beyond the human community and whether we owe ethical treatment to

nonhuman animals, plants, and ecosystems. A central issue then is just what

kind of value animals, plants, and ecosystems have: intrinsic value (as

goods in themselves) or mere instrumental value (insofar as they're useful

for something else). Some environmental ethicists argue that the

environment has instrumental value only. While humans may have intrinsic

value, we give value to other nonhuman things by virtue of our valuing

them. So everything from cell phones to lightsabers to the Mona Lisa has

value only because humans deem it to. These environmental ethicists urge us

to see that the environment offers us tremendous goods (food, oxygen,

aesthetic enjoyment, and more) which are instrumental in pursuing our

goals, but not in infinite supply. Thus, to protect our long-term interests

and those of future generations, we should work to preserve the $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left$

Other philosophers argue that this "resource management" approach

misses the point of an environmental ethic. It's criticized for being yet

another "anthropocentric ethic," which unjustly places humans at the center

of what is to be valued.1 One such critic is the $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left$

Peter Singer, who agrees with the view that value depends on a conscious

being (a valuer), who gives value to things, but disagrees that humans are

the only beings who count as conscious valuers. For Singer, ethics is

concerned with protecting the interests of others, which essentially

requires working to increase others' pleasure and alleviate their

suffering. And he holds that "consciousness, or the capacity for subjective

experience, is both a necessary and a sufficient condition for having an

interest."2 This means that to have an interest, one must be capable of

feeling (being consciously aware of) pleasure and pain. But of course many

nonhuman animals have this ability. Animals too are conscious valuers and

have interests-at the very least the interest to seek pleasure and avoid

pain. Humans thus owe animals decent and humane treatment, just as we do

other humans.3 Singer argues that we have no good reason to extend ${\it ethical}$

treatment solely to humans-a bias he calls "speciesism." Speciesism

parallels the injustice of racism by arbitrarily giving special status to

the interests of individual humans (over and above the interests of other $\ensuremath{\mathsf{o}}$

animals) just because they're members of our same species. Singer's point

is that consciousness is what's morally relevant, not membership in a

certain species. And while there may not be an absolutely clear line of

demarcation between animals which have consciousness and animals which

don't, according to Singer, all mammals and birds should clearly be

included because they can feel pain. But then what are we to think of Luke

Skywalker, who shoots womprats in his T-16 and even brags about it to his

friend Wedge? Presumably womprats can feel pain, yet this is of no concern

to our otherwise moral young hero.

The question of the ethical treatment of animals in Star $\,$ Wars proves

difficult, since the distinction between human and animal simply doesn't

hold-or at least not in the same way. After all, Yoda clearly isn't human,

but we couldn't call him a "mere" animal either. And other nonhuman

creatures like Watto the Toydarian junk dealer and Jabba the Hutt raise

similar problems. At the same time, some creatures certainly behave like

animals-for example, mynocks and wampas. So perhaps our question should be

rephrased: Are "animal-like" creatures treated ethically by the "human-

like" creatures?

We do see some humane relationships between human-like and animal-like

creatures. Han Solo and Chewbacca have a kind of friendship, albeit not one

of equals-a point parodied in the film Spaceballs. Chewie is like a pet

dog-loyal, dependable, and even well-trained, but not completely so

(apparently Wookiees just aren't good losers, or so Han warns C-3PO while

R2-D2 plots to defeat Chewie at a board game). But overall, Chewbacca is

treated almost like one of us. And on the other side, ethical corruption in

Star Wars is often illustrated through the inhumane treatment of animals by

characters such as Jabba the Hutt and Count Dooku. Creatures like the reek,

the nexu, and the acklay are unleashed on Obi-Wan, Padme, and Anakin in the

Geonosian arena as a spectator sport (like the lions of the $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

coliseum). And Jabba casts a slave-dancer down to a dungeon pit to be eaten

by the wild rancor. In addition to the potential harm to the human-like

characters in these cases, there's the questionable presence of exotic

animals, far from their natural habitats, in circus-like roles serving

humans (or the human-like) for entertainment as well as other purposes.

These animals are "owned" and their natural functions (like eating meat)

are put on display. As we'll see, this is completely out-of-sync with the Jedi way.

Although there's no mention of "rights" for animal-like creatures by

the "good guys" in Star Wars, they can't be guilty of simple speciesism.

Surely something like inter-species rights is at work in the Galactic

Senate. Members of different species work together, co-operatively for the

most part, toward the same political and ethical goals. Their different

appearances are so irrelevant for the purposes of democratic participation

that different species intermingle as if they're merely different cultures

or ethnic groups. We see inter-species co-operation in the Jedi Order and

the Rebel Alliance as well. What brings these creatures together is

capability, rather than species. In particular, self-consciousness is

important here. The abilities to self-reflect and rationally deliberate are

the very conditions for participation in democracy, which has at its center

equality, rights, and justice based on the intrinsic value of every human

being or humanlike creature. Here we see the very strong humanist element

in Star Wars-with a reminder that "human" need not apply only to Luke, Han ,

and the like.

But many environmental ethicists would $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

relations we see in Star Wars fall short of an animal ethic, since equal

treatment and respect extends only to those creatures who are "human-like,"

while there's no mention of ethical treatment for the animal-like

creatures. Star Wars seems to employ an anthropocentric ethic in that only

human-like traits are valued-and only because they're human-like. In the

end, critics argue that an ethic which excludes nonhuman animals allows for $\ensuremath{\text{c}}$

their use or destruction in the name of human interests.

Value in Nature

Beyond animal ethics, the philosopher Holmes Rolston, III $\,$ argues for

the intrinsic value of both animal and non-animal life. If something is

said to have intrinsic value, it usually implies that it should be

respected and not used or destroyed. For example, the intrinsic value of

each human being means that we owe respect to every individual, and are not

permitted under any circumstances to practice slavery or use humans as test.

subjects without their knowledge and consent. In the same sense Rolston

argues that we're obligated to respect nature due to its intrinsic value,

rather than its instrumental value for humans Humans don't put value in the

environment; it's already there. All of nature is a productive and creative

process and "there is value wherever there is positive creativity."4

Rolston reminds us that when we're walking in the $\mbox{\sc woods,}$ far from other

humans,, something "tells us" that although no other human may walk this

path again to see the beautiful flowers, we still ought not to pick them.

Each flower struggles to survive, to defend its life, and we should not

interrupt this process needlessly. The organism seeks its own good or

telos, the natural goal of an organisrn, which requires different actions

depending on its species-a plant photosynthesizes, while a wampa seeks and

eats meat. And this process is itself intrinsically creative. If a plant's $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

stem is cut off, it will repair itself; it will work to recover in a way

that a blaster or an AT-AT Walker won't. Although plants and (some) animals

are not conscious of this process, it's the creative process, not the

awareness of it, that has value.

By itself, this view would appear to be an environmental

individualism, the view that we have ethical obligations to distinct

individuals (in this case, each living organism) and not necessarily to

species or the environment as a whole. But Rolston argues that ultimately

each individual organism shouldn't be seen apart from its relationships

with other organisms, or from those processes which produced it-in other

words, their ecosystem. The sea monsters in the waters of Naboo, for

example, must be seen as part of their larger ecosystem, including the

water, the caves, and the other organisms in the food chain to which

they've had to adapt. An ecosystem isn't simply a collection of interacting

individuals, but a system of processes and relationships between different

organisms; this system creates and sustains life.5 Natural processes don't

just create organisms; they create diversity within species. And this ends

up being good for the overall ecosystem. In this sense, ecosystems seek

their own good and for this reason the ecosystem should be valued as well.

So, while intrinsic value is typically considered independent of all else,

Rolston insists that it be considered within a whole system. In other

words, each organism has intrinsic value, but intrinsic value isn't

absolute value (as is normally believed).6 He says:

The dialectic of instrumental and intrinsic values, embedded in

systemic value, is communitarian without subtracting anything organismic

because it integrates organic parts in a community whole. Earthworms are of

value because they aerate the soil for grasses and supply food for

catbirds, but also because they have an inherent good of their own. Neither

their instrumental value to grasses and catbirds or to the system, nor

their intrinsic value in themselves-no single thing alone but the fusion of

all contributes to integrity, stability, and beauty in the community.

This position, called environmental holism, maintains that the good of

the whole biotic community requires recognizing the interdependence of

organisms, and that the individual health and integrity of each organism

depends on the health and integrity of the entire natural world.

So while the intrinsic value of living individuals militates against

their arbitrary destruction or use, the fact that intrinsic value doesn't

imply absolute value means that sometimes our ethical obligations to

organisms may be trumped by other obligations. Choices can be made as to

the importance of competing values. For Rolston, there's a hierarchy of

value in nature, such that some values can be overridden by others.

Respecting "nature" because it has value doesn't mean respecting "equality"

among all living things. A self-conscious animal, say a Wookiee, can be

said to have more value than a less conscious animal like a mynock. And yet

a mynock, insofar as it has an ability to feel pleasure and pain, will have

more value than a non-conscious rock.

But while there's hierarchy of value in Rolston's philosophy such that

more sophisticated organisms have more value, this doesn't always mean

"humans first." As he says, "Humans count enough to have the right to

flourish here on Earth, but not so much that we have the right to degrade

or shut down ecosystems, not at least without a burden of proof that there

is an overriding cultural gain."8 But although human interests will lose

sometimes (when it comes to deforestation, for example), what we lose is

also a good thing to lose, namely, the exploitative attitude toward nature.

And what we stand to gain is a more harmonious relationship with nature.?

Our obligation is to become responsible $\mbox{members}$ of a \mbox{human} and \mbox{biotic}

community. Rolston holds that many things need to be taken into account

when making moral choices between individual animal, environmental, and

human interests. For example, in our efforts to preserve the environment

while pursuing human interests, special priority should be given to rare

species, to species which play particularly vital roles in ecosystems, to

biodiversity in the ecosystem, and to the process $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +$

products) of nature.

Now when it comes to the $\,$ Star $\,$ Wars $\,$ galaxy, $\,$ environmental concerns

aren't exactly the first priority. Yet there is evidence of a respect for

nature and life evident in the Jedi worldview.

"May The Force Be with You": Lessons from the Jedi

On the face of it, the Jedi way has much in common with a kind of

 $\mbox{mind-body dualism,}$ whereby one must overcome his biolog-ical nature rather

than become unified with it. 10 After all, Yoda affirms to Luke that

"luminous beings are we... not this crude matter." Yoda further insists

that we not judge him by his physical size and proves why in Attack of the

Clones and Revenge of the Sith. After death, a Jedi's body may disappear,

and indeed Obi-Wan Kenobi becomes even more $\,$ powerful $\,$ after $\,$ he $\,$ dies and $\,$

loses his physical being. This seems to suggest that the Jedi are more like

"minds" who temporarily learn to work within their bodies, as one might

learn to move around in a car. At the very least, this means that

consciousness, the mental life of the Jedi, is more than just biological matter.

But this isn't the whole picture. After all, life creates the Force.

"It's an energy field created by all living things," Obi-Wan tells Luke.

The point is echoed by Yoda: "For my ally is the Force. And a powerful ally

it is. Life creates it, makes it grow. Its energy surrounds us and binds

us... You must feel the Force around you. Here, between $\mbox{you}...$ me... the

tree... the rock... everywhere!" This isn't so much the "mind-over-matter"

picture as one of mind and matter interacting as two parts of $\,$ a $\,$ whole. A

Jedi padawan's task is to become more in touch with the physical world by

being more at one with the Force-a task achieved through both physical and

mental training. A Jedi must learn to feel the Force, rather than just

think about it. This allows him to move physical objects without touching

them, influence other minds, and "see" without looking.

There's an important biological basis here. The Force speaks through

living creatures and only to other living creatures. This may be explained

by what Qui-Gon Jinn says to young Anakin Skywalker, that "midi-chlorians"

are a microscopic life form residing in all living cells. We have a

symbiotic relationship with them-"living together for mutual advantage." As

Qui-Gon puts it "Without the midi-chlorians life could not exist. They

continually speak to us, telling us the will of the Force." This implies

that we already exist in a symbiotic relationship with these mes-sengers of

the Force, and when a young padawan learns to quiet the mind he can learn

the will of the Force by feeling it through the midi-chlorians in his

cells. Control of one's mind then is also control of, and a kind of

listening to, one's body so that mind and body can be one. So when $\,$ a $\,$ Jedi $\,$

says, "May the Force be with you," he really means, "May you be with the

Force-and may you quiet your mind to listen to it, to be aware of it."

Learning to listen to the Force also connects the Jedi with other

living things, creating a kind of harmony with them. And in this sense,

Jedi training is training in respecting nature-after all, it is a respect

for the living Force. The Jedi learns to recognize symbiotic relationships

of the natural world.11 $\,$ Once he learns this, he grows in wisdom by

understanding the entire natural world and his proper place within it.

"Mudhole? Slimy? My Home This Is": Jedi Living in the Natural World

The natural world confers powers of wisdom and balance, and it's $% \left(\frac{1}{2}\right) =\frac{1}{2}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right) =\frac{1}{2}\left($

natural environments in which Jedi feel most at home. During the "dark

times" of the Empire, the surviving Jedi retreat from the city-planet

Coruscant to hide among the natural caves of the Tatooine desert or the

swampy marshes of Dagobah. They live with nature, rather than against it,

in sparse, simple dwellings.

And when a Jedi gets into trouble, he consistently finds an ally in $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

the natives of some very natural environments. The "eco-communities" of the

Gungans and the Ewoks are very much at one with their environments.

Gungans are less technologically advanced than most other nearby cultures,

while the Ewoks have virtually no technology. Ewoks live within the trees

and their homes, clothes, and weapons are made out of simple materials

directly from their environment. Right away Leia and Wicket the Ewok are

natural allies against the stormtroopers. There seems to be no genuine evil

found on Endor. Never mind that the Ewoks originally captured and planned

to eat Han, Luke, and Chewie-it was nothing personal! In Star Wars there's

a big ethical difference between violence done out of duty or necessity

(the Jedi and the Ewoks, respectively) and violence done out of anger or

greed (Anakin slaughtering the Sand People in revenge and the bounty

hunters, respectively).

Strangely enough, the Jedi are fighting to establish what these

"natural" communities already have-a unity and harmony with the world. For

if we asked ourselves what the galaxy would look like after balance is

restored to the Force, we might guess that it's a galaxy where democracy

reigns, but an inter-galactic democracy that lets eco-communities like the

Ewoks and the Gungans live harmoniously and maintain their distinct

identities as "peoples." In other words, it would be a galaxy where harmony

and diversity are supreme, which are the very ideals of environmental ethics.

Only biological creatures are in touch with the \mbox{Force} in this way.

Here we learn of a key distinction between "artifacts" and "organisms" in

Star Wars. And Rolston makes this same point, first made by Aristotle: ${\tt A}$

machine doesn't have its own natural goal, but instead receives its purpose

from humans.12 A machine has no self-generating or self-defending

tendencies. In our world, as of yet, only biological creatures have this.

Robots can't reprogram themselves the way that even earthworms or algae can

in order to adapt creatively to a change in the environment.

And time and again we see that for all the threat and intimidation of

the technologically advanced storm troopers, battle droids, ${\tt AT-AT}$ walkers,

and the Death Star, ultimately they can't outdo biological creatures

working in harmony. When battle droids collide with the Gungans, and

stormtroopers with the Ewoks, the biological creatures always have the

surprising advantage: They work with nature to defend nature, and nature is

one with the Force. By doing this, they can respond to new and challenging

environments. Jedi know this and while they use technology, it's always in

the service of the Force of nature. So, while the Dark Side moves closer

and closer to overcoming the natural world, it fails in the end. When push

comes to shove, the natural processes in the biological $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

overcome human creations of technology, even if it's the "ultimate power in

the universe"-the Death Star. As Darth Vader admonishes one Imperial

officer: "Don't be too proud at this technological terror you've

constructed. The ability to destroy a planet is insignificant next to the $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +$

power of the Force."

Culture versus Nature

Environmental philosophers differ when it comes to whether human

culture is part of the natural world or is significantly distinct because

it's a product of deliberate behavior and not the spontaneous processes of

nature. This is also left unclear in Star Wars. On the one hand, the

are cosmopolitan. They find the city-planet Coruscant comfortable enough to

base their Temple where they reside, meet, and educate young Jedi. On the

other hand, many cities in Star Wars are full of corruption and decay.

Wan warns Luke as they enter the urban world of Mos Eisely, "You will never

find a more wretched hive of scum and villainy." The upside of cities is

that they allow different people to meet, live, and come together for

intergalactic deliberations. The downside is that they offer anonymity $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

which shelters and disguises dark characters, like shape-shifting bounty

hunters and Dark Lords of the Sith. Consequently, in cities, people try

mind their own business-no one is bothered in the slightest by $\operatorname{\mathsf{Han}}$ killing

Greedo in the Mos Eisley cantina. And as Qui-Gon says of Mos Espa,

"Spaceports like this one are havens for those who don't wish to be found."

Of course, for all the dangers of living in one of the major cities,

the dangers of not living in them can be just as great-if not greater. The

humanist values of the Republic, manifest in its anti-slavery laws,

simply ignored on Tatooine. The remote world, apart from civilization, can

become its own breeding ground for evil. To reconcile the values in the

natural world with the humanist values of the Republic, we might look to

Obi-Wan's explanation to Boss Nass, the ruler of the Gungans. In order to

convince him that he should be concerned for the Naboo during their time of

crisis, Obi-Wan reminds him that the Gungans have a symbiotic relationship

with the Naboo: "What happens to one affects the other, you must realize

this." Later this natural alliance between the two peoples proves vital for

saving both from the Trade Federation. Indeed, the Force's fundamentally

symbiotic relations exist not only at the microscopic level of the $\mbox{\ensuremath{\text{midi-}}}$

chlorians, but among different cultures and forms of beings. As Padme is

quite aware, once this point is conceded, an even stronger organic relation

is possible-one capable of fighting an entire droid army.

For an environmental philosopher like Rolston, natural communities are

held together by causal relations, whereas human communities are held

together by additional meaningful relations.14 Perhaps Obi-Wan's

description of the relationship between the Gungans and the Naboo is only a

metaphor, since there's a similar split between the natural world $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +$

cultural world of the democratic Republic. After all, when traveling

through the planet core on Naboo, Qui-Gon doesn't make such a big deal when

his little sea craft nearly gets eaten by a fish, which in turn gets eaten.

"There's always a bigger fish," he says calmly. Yet, he wouldn't so

casually describe the Trade Federation's pressure on the Naboo in this way.

Despite his respect for the natural world, he sees that it's governed by

very different principles. By contrast, human-like relationships should be

governed by democratic principles, which the Jedi regularly defend.

Restoring Balance to the Force

Rolston reminds us that even in a humanist ethic there's still a sense $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left$

that individual welfare is inseparable from the good of the whole,

"recognizing on a moral level in human affairs the symbiosis in biology." 15

But ultimately, the goal in environmental ethics is to balance the goods of

human culture and the goods of the natural world. Achieving balance for

humans is actually restoring balance, since it's out of an intricately

balanced natural world that we have evolved. Although distinct human

communities and natural communities have developed, they're not so

different that they can't live in harmony. Restoring balance to the Force,

for the Jedi, must mean restoring balance within the entire living

community-including cultural and natural worlds. Whether there exists a $\,$

real or only a metaphorical symbiotic relationship between human

communities may be left some-what unclear in Star Wars. But in either case,

restoring the natural symbiotic-like relationship is what the Jedi

consistently work toward. It's evident in all they do: deliberations among

the Jedi and between other peoples, diplomatic missions, and sometimes

"aggressive negotiations... negotiations with a lightsaber." The $\,$ Jedi see

themselves as part of a greater whole with other living things. When Anakin

begins to see himself as more important than the whole, he begins his break

with the Jedi way. Conversely, the redemption of both Han Solo and Lando

Calrissian comes about when they each begin to see their role in the larger $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

cause of the Rebellion.

The Jedi worldview brings us toward an ethic which includes all living $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

things. But unlike environmental ethics, here the interconnections are not

just within ecosystems, but to the one living system of the Force.

Ultimately, all living things are unified by the living Force, regardless

of place. But an important general view of Jedi philosophy is shared with

an environmental ethic, namely, that we should extend our ethical worldview

to include all living things. The point of environmental ethics is just

this idea of inclusion. Such a view reminds conscious beings of their

dependence on the natural world and of the interdependence of all living

things. Each individual, as precious as he is, is part of a greater whole.

And as it happens, the reward is internal too. For if we're all part of the

living Force, then restoring its balance is also restoring the balance

within each of us.

Send In the Clones:

The Ethics of Future Wars

RICHARD HANLEY

Clones can think creatively. You'll find they are immensely superior

to droids... They are totally obedient, taking any order, without question.

We modified their genetic structure to make them less independent than the original host."

* Lama Su, Prime Minister of Kamino

It's called Star Wars, and warfare is definitely a very bad thing,

with loss of life, injury, and myriad other kinds of suffering.

toughest kind of ethical question is: When is it okay to do very bad

things'? When you're the good guys? Maybe that's true, but it's rather

unhelpful. When God is on your side? Again, maybe true, but unhelpful. And

anyway, isn't the Force with the bad guys as well, in a big way?

Two critical questions arise for the moral justification of warfare:

when is it okay to engage in warfare, and how should you $% \left(x\right) =\left(x\right) +\left(x\right) +\left$

in warfare? It also matters, of course, how you conduct yourself after

warfare. But overlooked in the standard approaches to the ethics of warfare

is the question of how to recruit and treat your own combatants.

In Attack of the Clones, the Republic faces the prospect of war within its own ranks, as a separatist movement led by Count Dooku assembles a massive droid army. Supreme Chancellor I'alpatine engineers a vote to counter the threat with an army of clones which happens to be ready and waiting on Kamino. A battle ensues, and Yoda grimly notes, "Begun, the Clone War has."

This story raises another important contemporary moral issue besides warfare: cloning. Can it be permissible to produce clones of whole organisms? (That's what I'll mean by "cloning" in what follows.) What if the organism is a person, like Jango Fett? Can it be permissible to manipulate the process to engineer clones' characteristics, the way the clone army is engineered on Kamino? And in warfare, can it be permissible to use a clone army, rather than typical human beings? In what follows, I'll answer, "Yes" to all the above.

Cloning Gets a Bum Rap

The defender of warfare takes for granted that something can be inherently bad and permissible. It's also true that something can be wrong and not inherently bad. Public opposition to cloning is visceral, but I'll argue that much of it is misplaced. I don't think cloning is inherently bad. It can be wrong, but we have to answer ethical questions about the wrongness of actions that are not inherently bad by using a costbenefit analysis. Cloning might be dangerous (like not letting a Wookiee win), or

(like renting the Millennium Falcon), or unreliable (like Han Solo's word),

or liable to corruption and abuse (like the Force). It $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

application to human social and medical problems. It might in practice

require the wholesale loss of valuable human lives (as those who object to

the destruction of human embryos might claim). But if cloning is not

inherently bad, and harms no one (or does relatively little harm), it's not

wrong. Moreover, the burden of proof would be on the opponent of cloning-in

the absence of clear evidence that the $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

ought to permit things that are not inherently bad.

So why think cloning is not inherently bad? Because there's no good

reason to think it is. First, set aside the "yuck" factor. That the idea of

something is disgusting or creepy-giving Jabba the Hutt a sponge bath, say-

has no tendency to show that it is inherently bad. Second, set aside the

popular rhetoric. People are apt to use impressive language in condemning

cloning-claiming that it's contrary to human dignity, for instance-but

what's really needed is cogent argument that it' inherently so.

Yet there doesn't seem anything inherently bad about having a clone or

being a clone. Unless you have very strange ideas about identity, having a

clone is no threat to your numerical uniqueness. Boba Fett is genetically

identical to Jango Fett, but that makes him a cross between a son and a

very late identical twin.

Sometimes people claim that it's a bad thing to have another $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1$

individual around that is too much like them. But this is hard to take $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

seriously. We do not regard the lives of genetically identical twins as

significantly inferior to those of fraternal twins, or non-twins. When Luke discovers he has a long-lost twin, is it a happy occasion if Leia is fraternal, and not if (as can happen, but very rarely), she is a differently gendered identical? Even outside of family, we actively seek out those who have a lot in common with ourselves, and we think that the more commonality, the better. Maybe we don't want another person to be exactly like us, but there's no danger of that from cloning, given the enormous contribution of nurture in shaping our characteristics.

Looking at it from the other side, from the clone's point of view, if all else is equal, what difference does it make that you're a clone? (Sadly, I doubt that all else would ever be equal. But if we treat clones as less deserving of respect than the rest of us, that is our own moral failing, not theirs).

Finally, there's a general worry about the employment of artificial or"unnatural" reproductive procedures. If you still think there's something inherently bad about cloning, compare it with ordinary human reproduction (OHR), and with reproduction by in vitro fertilization (IVF). I submit if OHR is not inherently bad, then neither is IVF. (Remember, thereby claiming that either is always permissible-if it helps, imagine IVF case where no embryo is lost or discarded.) The point is that we imagine cases of cloning that parallel a typical IVF case in all the details. If the only difference is that we use one hundred percent of person's genetic material to produce the embryo, instead of fifty percent each of two persons, then surely the cloning is not inherently wrong if the IVF isn't.

Curiously, for a good deal of our recent history it was believed that in OHR, all the essential character of the embryo came exclusively from the man, and that the woman was little more than an incubator. Cloning might be

viewed as the equal opportunity realization of this!

Assuming I'm right, then cloning has gotten a bum rap. And if cloning is permissibly used to solve social problems, the case for cloning is bolstered (even if it has other costs). So it's good news for cloning if we discover that clone warfare is possible and acceptable. And it's not necessarily bad news for cloning if clone warfare is not a benefit of the process, as long as it's not a significant harm.

Getting into Your Genes

The possibility of a clone army scares a lot of people. Perhaps it's because they think that clones will be more easily manipulated: to control one is to control them all. This danger looms most clearly in the case of genetically determined traits. In a blooper that somehow survived the editing process, an Imperial stormtrooper bumps his head in A New Hope.

According to George Lucas, this incident receives a genetic explanation when we see Jango Fett similarly bump his head entering his ship on Kamino, and realize that the trooper is his cloned descendant. Jango Fett is not generally a klutz, of course, otherwise it would make little sense to clone him for an army.

But "nature" isn't the end of the story: clones of the same host can still vary greatly in their characteristics. If an army consists of genetic duplicates of the original—an army of Bobas, say—then their similarities will ultimately depend on "nurture," on environmental factors such as diet

and education. Raise and socialize them all the same way, and they'll presumably be very similar. But that has little if anything to do with cloning. Surely the same thing can be achieved with non-clones, with about the same rate of success. Clones can be bent to an iron will, but so can we. And it doesn't follow that the army will be superior by being raised in a uniform environment. Perhaps it's better to use a variety of environments, and see which produces the best soldiers-a survival of the Fewest!

Indeed, part of the point of the clone army is that it's superior to the droid army because the clones are more flexible, more "creative." It's the droids that are supposed to lack autonomy-the capacity to direct their own lives-so there's no need to bend them at all. And they can all be stood down in instant, as happened when Anakin destroyed the Droid Contr Ship in The Phantom Menace,

The other clones are not like Boba, however. They are genetically manipulated to reduce their autonomy, to make them a bit more like droids than you and I are. Genetic manipulation scares people, too, with without cloning. But genetic manipulation does not seem inherently either. It's playing God, but so what? Genetic manipulation doesn't necessarily harm anyone, as we can see from the following example. that in the story, Luke Skywalker's parents, other things being would have conceived a genetically deficient child, because of abnormality in the egg. (Leia can be safely ignored, since she certainly came from a different egg, but if it helps, feel free to suppose there never was a twin). The genetic deficiency is this: the child would have been born in the absence of treatment would have been missing an

arm (a fate that befalls Luke anyway, but from environmental causes).

However, the genetic deficiency is corrected prior to conception.

There are two ways of describing the outcome. First, we might say that

one and the same child, Luke, benefits from the procedure by having two

arms rather than one, so the treatment is not inherently bad. (I assume

that having both arms is a lot better than having just one.) But if we

intuitively tie identity to genetics, and given that the genetic difference

is significant, a better description is that the two-armed Luke is not the

same child as the one-armed would have been. You cannot harm a non-existent $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

child, and the existing one-Luke-is certainly not harmed by the treatment,

so the genetic manipulation is not inherently bad.

Now consider the opposite sort of treatment. It clearly harms a normal

child to surgically remove its arm, presumably even in the $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

Wars with its impressive prosthetics. But suppose the "treatment" had been

to alter the genetics of the egg $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left$

armless child, when otherwise a normal child-Luke-would have resulted.

Given that genetics is essential to identity, as long as the armless

child's life is on balance worth living, it cannot be said that that child

has been harmed by the procedure, since without the procedure it wouldn't

have existed at all. This is not to claim that it isn't wrong. But if the

procedure is wrong, it's not because some child is a victim of it. Such

cases can be puzzling, and it's not clear exactly what form the $\ensuremath{\mathsf{cost-}}$

benefit analysis ought to take, but the fact that they involve genetic

manipulation settles nothing.

Note the application of this line of reasoning to the production of

the clone army. Grant me for the sake of the argument that more autonomy is

a lot better than less. Then if the genetic manipulation occurs early

enough, it will be reasonable to maintain that no clone is harmed by the

process-not the diminished one, and not the "normal" one that would have

resulted in the absence of manipulation—as long as the diminished clone's

life is on balance worthwhile.

I'm inclined to grant that such a life can be worthwhile. First, there

are human beings with diminished autonomy who still have happy lives.

second, any worries about the life of a clone soldier being not worth

living have more to do with their being soldiers than with their being

clones. If it's bad to bring cloned soldiers into existence because they

will have miserable lives, they arguably are victims whether or $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

is genetic manipulation. And if it does not harm the clones, it still may

be wrong on other grounds, but the fact that the procedure involves genetic

manipulation settles nothing.

Different Strokes for Different Folks

There's an alternative to genetic manipulation that has nothing

especially to do with cloning: environmental engineering of the $\,$ clones as

they develop. "Hot-housed," the Fett clones develop at a faster rate

biologically, and are indoctrinated with intensive military training. Is

such environmental manipulation inherently bad? It clearly can have

victims, but also can have beneficiaries, since in many cases environmental

engineering (education, for instance) improves the lives of those educated.

Two possible features of environmental manipulation are of particular $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1$

moral concern: deception and coercion, bending another person's will to

your own ends by threats. Some popular ethical theories hold that deception

and coercion are inherently bad, and so manipulation involving one or both

is inherently bad. According to the philosopher Immanuel Kant, for

instance, deception and coercion are wrong because it is always wrong to

treat another person merely as a means to your ends.

Take brainwashing. This is likely involves both deception and

coercion, and so is a candidate for inherently bad environmental

manipulation. One of the objectionable things about some forms of terrorism

is that suicidal terrorists seem to have been brainwashed into unreasonable

actions. But even here, we should not jump to the conclusion that

manipulating a person's will by coercion or deception is always wrong. When

Obi-Wan uses his Jedi powers on the "death-stick" dealer in a Coruscant

sports bar, that individual changes his desires drastically. He repeats

mechanically, "I don't want to sell you death-sticks... I want to go home

and rethink my life," and leaves. The implication is that Obi-Wan has done

him a big favor.

So when is it okay to manipulate someone's will? One reasonable answer

is: when that person already has diminished autonomy. In the attempt to

protect children, for instance, we often cultivate attitudes in a manner

analogous to brainwashing (we also may deceive them in the process).

Perhaps this applies to the death-stick dealer, perhaps not. He is

apparently young, and has made some bad choices, and so may warrant

protection from himself. Another reasonable answer is: environmental

manipulation of another's will is okay when it is necessary to protect

others from the person to be manipulated. This is the thinking behind

ordering someone into therapy as part of their sentence for criminal

behavior, and certainly could apply to the death-stick dealer.

The manipulation of a person's will, genetically or environmentally,

is not the only way to get them to do what you want. Another way is to use

the desires they already have, by making them an offer "too bad to refuse"-

this is a clear case of coercion. When Lando Calrissian betrays Han Solo

and his companions, he admits that he $\;$ does $\;$ it $\;$ under $\;$ threat $\;$ from $\;$ Darth

Vader. Extraction of information under threat of torture-as Vader does to

Han shortly thereafter-is another example. Such coercion seems to be always wrong.

Yet another way to get someone to do what you want is to use the

desires they already have, by giving them an offer too Mood to refuse-call

this inducement. It seems we are more comfortable morally with inducement

opposite directions in the two $\mbox{\sc cases:}$ we find inducement more morally

problematic the less autonomous the induced individual is. The rather

childlike Jar-Jar Binks is induced into supporting Chancellor Palpatine's

grab for power by his overweening desire to play an important role in the Senate.

This leaves us with an interesting question. Given that there's

nothing inherently bad about producing the clones in the first place,

with genetic manipulation, might the clones be victims of $\$ brainwashing or

inducement? And if so, are they any worse off than other combatants in

warfare? Are they perhaps better off? Can such treatment be justified, in

virtue of its role in warfare? To answer, we need to examine the ethics of

warfare in general.

War: What Is It Good For?

Warfare involves death, injury, and myriad other kinds of suffering.

The battles spectacularly depicted in Star Wars are entirely typical in this regard. Warfare is inherently bad. But this doesn't mean warfare is always wrong. Sometimes it's permissible to do inherently bad things, such as killing a human being in genuine self-defense.

It is sometimes claimed that morality doesn't apply in warfare, a view with the strange name of "realism." If true, realism would of course have the consequence that in warfare you can do no wrong, no matter how much harm you do, or to whom. In this respect, "realism" is hopelessly unrealistic.

Equally implausible is absolute pacificism: the view that all violence, and especially killing, is wrong. We are shocked that Obi-Wan allows Vader to kill him. We do seem to allow that a person may lay down their own life for a noble cause, if they so choose. Notice, however, that if absolute pacificism is correct, then you are obligated to let an evil attacker kill you, and moreover to let them kill anyone else. It is hard to reconcile this judgment with the claim that lives are of equal value. If your life Is as valuable as your attacker's, then it's permissible to choose yours over theirs by killing in self-defense.

It will come as no surprise, then, that the standard approach to the ethics of warfare is in fact modeled on permissible violence between individuals. In order for violence against another to count as genuine self-defense, it must satisfy the following conditions: reasonable beliefit must be reasonable for you to believe you are under significant threat,

and that must be the reason you use violence; last resort-if you could

simply run away from your attacker, and not put anyone else in danger, you

ought to run away rather than kill them; and reasonable force - the

response must be proportional to the threat, and not significantly threaten

others in turn. This also applies to the use of violence to protect others.

There are circumstances in which it is permissible to engage in

violence to protect your nation or others. The traditional account of these

circumstances is called "Just War theory." There must be: just cause-a

credible threat; right intention-the reason for fighting is to respond to

the threat, with the ultimate aim of a just peace; competent authority-the

decision to fight is made by true representatives of the nation or group;

last resort-peaceful means have been exhausted; reasonable prospect of

success-it is credible that a just peace will result. In addition, a nation

or group engaged in warfare must satisfy the conditions of discrimination-

only combatants are to be targeted, and proportionality-the force used $\ensuremath{\mathsf{must}}$

be proportionate to the threat faced.

These conditions are not easily satisfied, and all must be satisfied

for warfare to be permissible. Only the very best of reasons will do By

analogy, consider Anakin's wholesale slaughter of the Sand People. He

certainly had something like just cause, since they were responsible for

the undeserved suffering and death of his mother. But he acted out of $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1$

and a desire for revenge, and so failed to satisfy the condition of right

intention. His response was out of proportion to any threat they presented

to him. It certainly wasn't a last resort, and he failed to discriminate by

killing the women and children. It is also highly problematic that he acted

unilaterally, in vigilante fashion.

To Be All You Can Be, or Not? - That Is the Question

Whatever its success, Just War theory has had very little to say about

the recruitment, training, and deployment of one's own troops?. The same is

true of international agreements governing warfare, such as the $\ensuremath{\mathsf{Geneva}}$

Convention.

Take recruitment, Plato apparently thought that homosexual $\ensuremath{\mathsf{men}}$ $\ensuremath{\mathsf{make}}$

better soldiers, at least in couples, dubiously claiming each will fight

more ardently to prove himself a worthy lover. Historically, financial

reward has probably delivered more recruits than the promise of glory:

mercenaries like Jango Fett have formed a substantial complement of most

armies (an interesting feature of the Iraq campaign is the relatively high-

by modern standards-number of mercenaries employed by the United States).

Financial rewards can be less direct, too. Free college tuition is

tempting reason to join the military, as is the prospect of $\operatorname{\mathsf{gainful}}$

employment.

Recruitment practices can be morally problematic in a variety of ways.

They might be unfairly exclusionary (for instance, the U.S. military's $% \left(\frac{1}{2}\right) =\frac{1}{2}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right) +\frac{1}{2}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right) +\frac{1}$

attitude to homosexuals is rather different from Plato's). The institution $\ \ \,$

of a draft might violate autonomy, forcing individuals to fight against

their will. Even volunteer armies are constituted to a disproportionately $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right$

large extent by underprivileged social groups, especially when it comes to

fighting, raising concerns of social justice-the poor used as cannon fodder

by the wealthy, to put it polemically. Or a volunteer $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1$

mostly thugs, who will use membership in the military as a pretext to $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left($

commit moral violations.

Next, consider training of a specifically military sort: to fight and $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1$

kill. How do you get people to fight at all? The prevailing strategy is to

condition military personnel, so that they will respond appropriately to

situations and orders without having to think about them. They need to be

physically fit, and the physical training is employed in a disciplinary

fashion, to discourage individuality and develop a team mentality. To

appropriately react to situations, it's desirable to have ingrained $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1$

responses-to make them a part of "muscle memory"-so that trained

individuals will just execute as desired, when required. The "education and

combat training" programs on Kamino that Lama Su is so proud of seem to

accomplish this very efficiently.

Take the case of Anakin Skywalker. His Jedi training came relatively

late. We see other Jedi being inducted into Jedi ways as small children by

Yoda, away from the influence of their familk:s and others, rather like

being raised in a monastery. The clear implication is that part of ${\tt Anakin's}$

problem is that he was not sufficiently inculcated-not brainwashed enough-

to cope fully with his ability to use the Force, and the responsibility

that goes with it. Presumably, it would have been better either that he had

undergone the full training, or else not have been trained at all $\ensuremath{\text{Typical}}$

military training can be morally problematic. The more autonomy soldiers

have to begin with, the more $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right$

techniques to get them to do what we want-to fight, kill and $\,$ die $\,$ for the

rest of us.

With humans, it doesn't seem as problematic to provide positive inducements to fight, at least for mercenaries. But inducements such

inducements to fight, at least for mercenaries. But inducements such as a

free college education are directed more towards the young, who may not be properly assessing the very real risk that they will actually be called on to fight. Even where autonomy is diminished, the justification of brainwashing is usually that it is for the individual's own good: to protect them from themselves until they are better able to choose. This argument cannot be generally deployed in the case of military training.

Granted, if a man is going to fight anyway, he might be better off with

better off not to be in the military at all, or if he is in the military, not in a $\,$

full military training. But other things being equal, he is surely

fighting capacity.

That military training is morally problematic does not altogether prohibit it. But it does seem that, if it were to be justified, it would have to promise and deliver much good. When we add these considerations to the already strong presumption against warfare, it may be that very few actual campaigns have sufficient merit.

Send in the Clones!

Clones with relatively diminished autonomy may provide the most morally satisfying solution. They are not offered inducements to fight, removing one area of concern about those with diminished autonomy.

Moreover, since they will never acquire full autonomy, the argument that they need protection from themselves until they know better is undercut.

There are still moral problems with an army of diminished clones. We tend to find the training and deployment of fighting dogs to be more distasteful than the training and deployment of human soldiers, in part because the dogs are relatively lacking In autonomy. So we should likewise

be concerned about raising lu'.hung men and women who really don't know any better. But given the alternatives, all in all it may be best to send

in the clones.

Part III

uniform

"Don't Call Me a Mindless Philosopher!"

Alien Technologies and the Metaphysics of The Force

A Technological Galaxy: Heidegger and the Philosophy of Technology in $$\operatorname{Star}$$ Wars

JEROLD J. ABRAMS

In the Dark Age of the Empire the light of the Force has all but gone

out of the world, and the few remaining Jedi look to misty-ages of an

ancient past for guidance in their struggle against the forces of evil.

age" and describes the Jedi Knights as "guardians of peace and justice in

the old Republic. Before the dark times, before the Empire."

The same view of history is echoed in the writings of the twentieth-

century German philosopher Martin Heidegger (1889-1976): rather than making

progress, our greatest days are, in fact, behind us; and history is

actually getting worse. 1 A corruption has set in, like the Fall in the

Garden of Eden; only here, in Heidegger and Star Wars, our sin is

technology, or, more specifically, what $\mbox{Heidegger calls "enframing."2}$ This

is the process of reorganizing all the various elements of nature, trees

and rocks, rivers and animals, carving them up and placing them into so

many artificial "frames," all to be used up as "resources."

Ultimately, at the end of our present age, all that will remain of the earth is a synthetic ball of parts and wires, glass and steel-all

and very unnatural-like a Death Star residing in the cold dark reaches of

space. Indeed, this is precisely the problem of technology we find in Star

Wars. True, it may at first glance appear that progress is defined by the $\ensuremath{\mathsf{L}}$

ascent of technology-a view advanced, for example, by Han Solo-but on

closer analysis, the path of technological enframing is precisely what

distorts our vision of the Force.

Heidegger on Technology

In philosophizing about the present age, Heidegger wants to understand

what exactly went wrong with our culture, how we ended up with all these

atom bombs and world wars and nuclear waste. So, acting as a kind of

philosophical detective, he traces the modern crisis back to the earliest

stages of thought, when "thinking" just began. And it began, he claims, in

ancient Greece, particularly with the Presocratic philosophers, like

Parmenides and Heraclitus, who started asking about the nature of the

universe. Their basic question can be put a number of different ways: "What

is being?" or "What does 'being' mean?" or "Why is there something rather

than nothing?" Similarly, we can imagine ancient Jedi first philosophizing

about the nature of the Force, which eventually leads to the discovery and $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

use of its Dark Side.

The Presocratics' response to being was pure "astonishment," which was

appropriate. Indeed, we too should be blown away by the sheer being of

being; and in our astonishment we should not attempt to divide up reality

into scientific parts, but to marvel at being-to marvel that there is a

universe at all-through poetry, just as the Presocratics did, and just as

the Jedi marvel at the Force. This was a noble beginning to thought; but

today, according to Heidegger, the question of being doesn't really even

come up on the screen anymore. As Heidegger puts it in Being and Time, "The

question has today been forgotten."3 Moreover, Heidegger doesn't mean a

little "memory-loss," but a much deeper sense of forgetfulness. We actually

forget about our own existence-a kind of ontological amnesia.4 And if the

question of being (or the Force) does happen to arise, we are always quick

to dismiss it as a meaningless garble. Consider, for example, the many non-

Jedi, like Han Solo and Admiral Motti, who simply don't recognize the power

of the Force. What the Jedi call the Force, Han refers to as "a lot of $\ensuremath{\mathsf{I}}$

simple tricks and nonsense." And Motti condescendingly mocks Vader's "sad

devotion to that ancient religion."

So why exactly did we forget the question of being? The answer, in a

word, is technology, and especially, for Heidegger, modern technology.

Historically speaking, technology was at its best in the age of the ancient

Greeks, who conceived it as art and as craft. But gradually technology was

corrupted. In order to explain this historical transition, Heidegger

distinguishes between two kinds of technological experience: the "ready-to-

hand" and the "present-at-hand." The ready-to-hand is our primitive tool-

use relation: we experience tools and the external environment as natural

extensions of our bodies. In Heidegger's terminology we $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

our world through our basic "equipment"-we are "at home" in the $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

we'll see, the Jedi use technology-such as the lightsaber-in just this way.

This is "authentic" existence, our authentic "being-in-the-world," being at

one with the world. As such, we "care" for nature in this mode. We care for

our homes, for each other, and above all for the earth, and thereby allow $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +$

nature to reveal its own internal natural forms on its own terms. We care

for being, in general, just as a nerfherder cares for his nerfs. As

Heidegger puts it, "Man is not the lord of beings. Man is the shepherd of

Iking."

reveal itself o our terms.

The "present-at-hand," by contrast, is the opposite: we ourselves as the "lords of beings," who are detached from the environment by way of high-tech tools. Not so much in our various machine products (like AT-AT walkers, X-wing fighters, and hologram generators)-but more our basic attitude toward the universe. The "essence of technology," according to Heidegger, is really a new way of seeing. In the presenthand we experience nature as a set of detached objects, as though we've on some new and super-powerful goggles that allow us to see far deeper into the hidden layers of nature. And, of course, the more we can see, the we can control. In fact, nowadays we can grind up or reprogram just anything: with hydroelectric dams and deforestation, unlimited surveillance and nanotechnology. But in so doing, we are, in fact, "challenging" to reveal itself to us as something "for us," something which serves instrumental needs, and not as being in itself. Rather than caring being and allowing it to reveal itself on its own terms, we challenge it

So, in effect, while we're forcing nature to reveal a side to u~, simultaneously, with regard to being as being, it's "covered up," as Heidegger puts it, and it "shows itself only in a distorted way,"6 just as the Emperor appears distorted in Return of the Jedi and Revenge of the Sith. Heidegger calls this process of distortion "enframing." Here everything natural, everything good, is pounded into an artificial frame, everything is looked at with a cold hard gaze, objectified and detachedall material for the sterile stare of white-jacketed lab men or graysuited Imperial officers. Each part of nature is sliced clean from the whole and

examined under a thousand microscopes, prodded with lasers and high-tech

pitchforks-all to squeeze out maximal output, maximal efficiency, and total

control. This is "The Age of the World Picture," as Heidegger puts it, when

nature is placed inside a frame for us to objectify as a $\ensuremath{\mathsf{mere}}$

representation of our own instrumental will. Think of how the lush planet

of Alderaan is "enframed" within the Death Star's main viewscreen just

prior to its destruction.

Once we have set upon this path of enframing, all that will be left of

the earth are masses of "standing reserve." This means reality converted by

technology into mere stuff, always standing by, always ready to be used up.

Forests become "lumber," and rivers become "hydro-electric power." Nature

thus appears only as a set of lifeless objects always ready for quick use.

But a further problem arises: in boxing-up the earth, we gradually lose

sight of the natural order of things. Out of sight, out of mind - our $_{\text{new}}$

technological vision clouds our old understanding of the world. And slowly $\,$

but surely, we begin to forget the question of being.

In his later years, Heidegger reflected on these phenomena of

progressive enframing and increasing forgetfulness, but $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

sense of despair. There's nothing we can do to stop the massive machine of

enframing; it's completely out of our hands. Perhaps we once could, but now

it's impossible. We simply cannot save ourselves. As Heidegger says, "Only

a god can save us."

"An Elegant Weapon": The Lightsaber as Ready-To-Hand

We find the same Heideggerian saga of technology in $\mbox{\it Star}$ Wars. Here

the natural ready-to-hand is corrupted by the pre-sent-at-hand relation and

the will to enframe all things. Moreover, in the wake of the path of

enframing by the Empire, masses of standing reserve are generated. And as a

consequence of this enframing and standing reserve, a certain forgetting $% \left(\frac{1}{2}\right) =\frac{1}{2}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right) +\frac{1}{2}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right) +\frac{$

occurs, particularly evident in Vader's own forgetfulness of himself.

Ultimately, this forgetting is so deep, the standing reserve so massive,

and the path of enframing so aggressive, that in the end only a god can

save us... or, in this case, only the Jedi Knight Luke Skywalker.

Luke's adventure begins on Tatooine. Following his runaway droid $\ensuremath{\mathsf{R2-}}$

D2, Luke encounters Obi-Wan Kenobi, who has, in fact, been waiting a long

time to give Luke something very special: "Your father's lightsaber. This

is the weapon of a Jedi Knight. Not as clumsy or random as a blaster... $\tt An$

elegant weapon for a more civilized age." On board the Millennium Falcon,

Luke starts his (very Heideggerian) training. He must learn to think of his

lightsaber not as some external and value-neutral object that's present to

him, but as a natural part of his body, an extension of his very being. In

other words, he must make the transition from the "present-at-hand" to the

"ready-to-hand." And, more importantly, he must conceive both himself and

his lightsaber as dynamic and fluid extensions of the Force itself. Luke

practices his swordsmanship with a training remote (a small floating $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right$

sphere), which hovers around him, stinging him with laser beams. Failing at

first to defend himself, Obi-Wan suggests Luke wear a helmet with the

blast-shield down so he cannot see at all, which Luke can hardly

understand. But Obi-Wan instructs him: "Your eyes can deceive you. Don't

trust them." Effectively, Luke is warned not to use the present-athand,

but to feel the moment: "Remember, a Jedi can feel the Force flowing

through him." Luke re-engages the training remote and immediately succeeds.

"You know, I did feel something," Luke tells Obi-Wan. He has begun to learn

that the Force is not at all a visual experience, but one of feeling, as though an energy field were flowing through him, connecting him to all things.

In the words of Yoda, Luke is beginning to "unlearn what he has learned"-and indeed, a lesson that will prove valuable later on, when Luke must battle a much greater artificial sphere: the Death Star. "Use the Force, Luke," he hears Obi-Wan's voice speaking through the Force-"Let go, Luke." Quickly approaching his final target, and remembering his early training with the remote, Luke turns off his computer-controlled targeting system (much to the worry of his team), effectively blinding himself again. Aiming only through the Force, he fires a perfect shot into the Death Star's core, blowing it to pieces.

Yoda as Being-in-the-Dagobah System

As great as this accomplishment is, however, Luke is not yet a Jedi Knight. He must continue his training under a new Jedi master, Yoda, lives in the Dagobah system. Yoda appears as an organic extension of natural environment, perhaps the best example of Heideggerian "attunement" in Star Wars. Yoda's "being-in-the-world" is one entirely based in "ready-to-hand." With no technology to speak of, Yoda has only some basic equipment for cooking and living in his natural environment-and his dwelling is made of earth and mud. As a "being-in-the-world" (a being connected with his environment), Yoda lives as one with his surroundings, in perfect harmony with nature. Emerald green like the lush marshes all around him, he's similarly filled with the natural light of the Force. He's

"at home" in the world, and nothing on Dagobah is "covered over"; his existence here is authentic.

Indeed, the contrast with the hard lines and right angles of the

Galactic Republic is made quite explicit when Luke descends on Dagobah,

covered in technology: his X-wing fighter, his high-tech uniform, his

companion R2-D2, and even his food all appear very synthetic. Amused at the $\,$

absurdity, Yoda asks Luke directly, "How you get so big, eating food of

this kind?" None of this sort of thing is essential to Yoda-and still less

is it essential for Luke's own Jedi training in the swamp. Although Yoda

apparently cannot help himself from stealing Luke's little light pen:

"Mine! Or I will help you not"-probably because it reminds him of the old

days of the Republic and of his own lightsaber, an essential piece of Jedi

technology that Yoda no longer wears on his person.

Only a few feet tall, long-eared and green, hobbling along on

tridactyl feet with the aid of his Gimer stick,8 Yoda seems harmless...

even ridiculous. And Luke cannot, for the life of him, imagine that

pesky little creature is a great Jedi warrior (not that wars make one

great, as Yoda later notes). From Luke's still-clouded perspective of

things, Yoda is simply too small to be a Jedi, just as Luke's X-wing

fighter is simply too large to retrieve from the swamp. Luke is still very

young, though, and not yet well-trained in the ways of the Force-"Too much

of his father in him," as Luke's perceptive Aunt Beru foresees. But before

he leaves Dagobah, Luke will learn a great many things-and beginning

precisely here, with his own inverted view of the world. Yoda tells Luke:

Size matters not. Look at me. Judge me by my size, do you? Mm? $\mbox{\sc Mmmm}\dots$

And well you should not. For my ally is the Force. And a powerful $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +$

is. Life creates it, makes it grow. Its energy sur-rounds us and binds us..

. You must feel the Force around you. Here, between you... me... the tree..

. the rock... everywhere! Yes, even between the land and the ship!

This description of the Force also closely resembles Heidegger's conception of being. Like the Force, being is everywhere, all around us. binds all the elements of the universe together: it's that which undergirds the rocks just as surely as starfighters. Yet, in being everywhere, Force, or being, is equally nowhere. For being everywhere at once, it isn't easily locatable, which makes it so easy to forget. But we must learn experience it through the art of the ready-to-hand and above all through meditation, as Yoda advises Luke on Dagobah. Similarly, Qui-Gon tells Anakin that when he learns to quiet his mind and meditate, the Force speak to him. For Heidegger, too, we must meditate on being in order for to speak to us. For just as there is a voice of the Force, so too is there a voice of being. As Heidegger puts it, "For, strictly, it is language speaks. Man first speaks when, and only when, he responds to language listening to its appeal."? And language, according to Heidegger, speaking as being: "Language is the house of Being. In its home man dwells.

Enframing and the Eye of the Empire

Powerful as the Light Side of the Force may be, however, the Dark Side is also very strong. And those who follow its path are the Dark Lords of the Sith. Rather than emphasizing the importance of a passive and quiet, contemplative mind, the Sith are trained in aggression and technical thinking, control and domination. In a word, they're trained in the mode of the present-at-hand, rather than the illumined ready-to-hand. Instead of feeling the Force, the Sith are trained visually to control nature as a set of external objects. All of reality, on this view, is ready to be

subordinated and controlled, and all for the sole purpose of increasing

their power over nature. Filled with anger, filled with fear, the Dark Side

of the Force-taken to its logical limit-is precisely what gives rise to the

darkest phenomenon of reality: enframing}

Perhaps nowhere in Star Wars is this combination of the present-

moon," the Death Star is, in fact, a space station. But on even closer

inspection, it actually resembles a massive artificial eyeball (much like

the gigantic eye in Tolkien's The Lord of the Rings). It has a windowed

iris and a distinct pupil, out of which Darth Vader and the Emperor watch-

and the entire structure rotates to observe its territory within a massive

solar socket of space. Moreover, under this present-at-hand gaze,

Empire steadily builds masses of standing reserve, most evident in the

droid army and the clone factory on the ocean planet Kamino. These clones

are enframed "internally" through genetic engineering, to decrease their

autonomy and increase their collective thought. While later they are

enframed "externally" as they are sheathed in the hard white armor and

helmets of the Imperial stormtroopers. One should note here, however, that

the standing reserve is not all on the Empire's side. Both sides use masses

of droids and spacecraft. And the Republic (before it becomes the Empire)

uses the clone army to fight the Separatists in Attack of the Clones.

On the other hand, the massive rise of enframing and standing reserve $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left($

is hardly being directed by Yoda and Mace Windu, or even through the Light

Side of the Force. Rather the Dark Side has stealthily gained control of

the process of enframing without the Jedi knowing it. As Count Dooku

confidently informs Obi-Wan, "The Dark Side of the Force has clouded their

Ithe Jedis'] vision, my friend." The void of darkness is slowly but surely

spreading, and extinguishing the Jedis' power to use the Force. And this

applies equally to young Anakin Skywalker, the soon-to-be Darth Vader. With

not a little concern about Anakin's fear of losing his mother, Yoda warns,

"Clouded this boy's future is." In Heidegger's terms, this clouding of the

Force by the Dark Side is precisely the covering up of being by enframing.

Heidegger says, "[Being] can be covered up to such a degree that it is

forgotten and the question about it and its meaning altogether omitted. $\mbox{"12}$

In Anakin's case, at the very height of his own enframing, this clouding

will indeed become "forgetting," as Luke rightly points out.

The Enframing of Anakin Skywalker

Anakin and his mother Shmi are slaves, both owned by Watto,

Toydarian junk dealer. And Anakin knows it's wrong. Even as a little boy,

he's well aware that Watto subordinates his person-hood-evident in his

first meeting with Padme. "You're a slave?" she asks him. "I'm a person, $\$

and my name is Anakin!" he responds. As a slave, Anakin works on all manner

of machines and is actually quite gifted in his work. He even brags to $\operatorname{Qui-}$

Gon that he can help fix their ship's hyperdrive, and also takes

considerable pride in showing Padme his newest creation, a protocol droid

for his mother-C-3PO. But despite all his talents, Anakin's powers have

already been wrongly honed in the service of control. He lives in $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +$

of high-tech tools and so many enframed things which themselves require $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

tools. Indeed, at a very basic level, Anakin himself is Watto's own living

tool, which is precisely how Aristotle defines a "slave" in the Politics.

These distortions of slavery and the immersion in technology are the initial steps of a descent that will later spiral downward and out of

control with the death of Anakin's mother at the hands of the vulgar and

nomadic Sand People. Infuriated at his powerlessness to keep Shmi alive, as

her poor tortured body goes limp in his arms, Anakin, aflame with rage,

proceeds to slaughter the entire community of Sand People (including the

women and children). Trying to console him, Padme clumsily explains that

Shmi's death was not his fault: "You're not all-powerful." But furious,

Anakin insists, "Well I should be. Someday I will be. I will be the most

powerful Jedi ever." At this point, Anakin's early technological skills and

interests become obsessions for control and manipulation. Perhaps $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +$

wanted to free the slaves (as he told Qui-Gon he had dreamed) and be the

"shepherd of being"-as Heidegger means "shepherd" in the sense not only of

"caring for," but also "setting free." But now he is on the path to

becoming the "lord of beings" in the form of Lord Vader.

His rage has permanently unbalanced him, $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left$

evident than in his futile charging attack on Count Dooku against Obi-Wan's

desperate warning. Ultimately, Yoda rescues Anakin and Obi-Wan from the

powerful Sith Lord, but Anakin has lost his arm to Dooku's lightsaber.

Severed from his natural ready-to-hand relation, his natural being-in-the-

world is now robotically mediated through an artificial hand attached to a

cyborg arm. As a result of his thoughtless fury, Anakin has now shifted

from the ready-to-hand (a natural hand-link to the Force and humanity) to

the present-at-hand (the artificial hand-link to the Dark Side).

And this is only the beginning. His next step toward becoming fully

enframed is brought about by Obi-Wan himself, Anakin's teacher. Following a

violent battle of lightsabers between the two, Anakin is left severely

maimed and his biological body is no longer capable of sustaining itself on

its own. After an extensive robotic rebuilding of his body, Anakin now

wears a full suit of black armor and a helmet with a mask covering his

entire face. His senses are now all artificially mediated through

technology, while he is fed through an internal tube in his helmet.

Virtually everything vital has been replaced: his spine, his internal

organs-his entire experience of the world is completely mediated by

artifice. Even his voice is translated through a computer; while his

breathing is controlled by an internal ventilator: "He's more machine now

than man. Twisted and evil." And this new machine of a man is a terribly $\ensuremath{\mathsf{a}}$

imposing figure, to say the least. Only later are we given a rare

voyeuristic look into the layers of Vader's enframing. In The $\operatorname{\mathsf{Empire}}$

Strikes Back an Imperial officer accidentally witnesses Vader privately

"dressing." We even see his pale human skin (kept private from the light)

and his awful mutilated skull-but only for a second as a quick robotic $\operatorname{\mathsf{arm}}$

plunges down his helmet, h'reshly closed to the world, Vader now commands

the officer, only to turn away as the top of his demonic black nest closes

down all around him.

Ultimately, this same process of descent into enframing happens

Luke as well, whose hand is severed by Vader and replaced with a robotic

hand. And even later, Vader loses his hand again to Luke's lightsaber. But

upon cutting off Vader's robotic hand, Luke notices his own robotic hand

(covered by a black glove similar to Vader's). Luke now understands Yoda's

earlier concern-he may yet follow the same path:

Yoda: A Jedi's strength flows from the Force. But beware of the Dark

Side. Anger... fear... aggression. The Dark Side of the Force are they.

Easily they flow, quick to join you in a fight. If once you start down the

dark path, forever will it dominate your destiny, consume you it will, as it did Obi-Wan's apprentice.

Luke: Vader. Is the Dark Side stronger?

Yoda: No... no... no. Quicker, easier, more seductive.

We hear the same worry from Obi-Wan: "Vader was seduced by the Dark Side of the Force." Indeed, the Dark Side's powers are incredibly intense, as Vader tries to explain to Luke: "You don't know the power of the Dark Side." In the end, however, Luke does not succumb. And his own artificial enframing remains relatively minimal compared to Vader's.

Only a Jedi Can Save Us: Forgetting and Recollecting

Vader's enframing is, to be sure, all but complete. His being-in-the-

world is so artificially mediated, so incredibly distorted, that he no

longer fully understands what it is he's doing-or why. No longer human, he

has entirely lost touch with himself. It's true that Vader may not have

forgotten the question of being in general, as Heidegger conceives it. But

clearly he has forgotten something. He has, at the very least, forgotten

the man he used to be. And beyond that, in a very Heideggerian sense, he

has equally forgotten his own original being-in-the-world-indeed he has

even forgotten his own name. Luke makes exactly this point to $\ensuremath{\text{Vader}}$, when

he calls him by his original name, "Anakin Skywalker." Vader (irritated)

scolds Luke: "That name no longer has any meaning for me." But Luke

persists: "It is the name of your true self. You've only forgotten." And he

has forgotten precisely because of his detachment from the being of the

Force and his horrible descent into the darkness of enframing.

And now, at the end of the saga, it would indeed appear, with

almost complete forgetfulness, that only a god can save him.14 Only there

is conspicuous absence of God or gods in the Star Wars galaxy-although

"angels" apparently reside in deep space and the Ewoks mistake Threepio for

a god. Nevertheless, Vader is ultimately saved by the semi-divine power of

the Force and through the actions of Luke. Inspired by Luke's dedication to

 $\mbox{him, Vader begins to remember. He returns to himself and becomes $$\operatorname{Anakin}$$

Skywalker once again. Now with his "own eyes" he vanquishes the Emperor and $\ensuremath{\mathsf{Emperor}}$

turns his back on the Dark Side of the Force. But while his soul is saved,

his body/machine is badly broken and he succumbs to death $\,$ - $\,$ although not

before asking Luke to take off his horrible mask and "uncover" his true

being from the shroud of artifice. The layers of enframing are at last

peeled back to reveal the man. His spirits recharged, Luke has not come

this far to watch his father die in the Death Star (only moments from $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1$

destruction). "I've got to save you," he declares. But Anakin knows all too

well, "You already have, Luke."15

"If Droids Could Think...": Droids as Slaves and Persons

ROBERT ARP

Years ago, I watched A New Hope with a blind person $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

asked if I could describe to her what was going on throughout the movie.

After the Twentieth Century Fox fanfare ended and the wonderful John

Williams soundtrack began, I read the opening paragraphs to her. What

happened after the next few scenes was fascinating. She listened to C-3PO's

opening dialogue where he says somewhat frantically, "Did you hear that?

They shut down the main reactor. We'll be destroyed for sure! This is

madness! We're doomed..." However, before I could describe the scene to

her, Mary asked me, "What does that man look like?" I told her it was not a

man, but a droid-a gold-plated robot who looks like a man. She paused a moment and continued, "Oh... It sounded just like a man" Being naturally inquisitive, I asked Mary what made her think that C-3PO was a man. Her response was that C-3PO used language, and had expressed the emotions of fear and concern.

My exchange with Mary was fascinating for two reasons. First, if Ι were blind, and a robot approached me on the street and started talking me the way C-3PO does-with all of his over-dramatizing of events, expressions of reluctance, and name-calling-most likely I would think human being was talking to me. Second, my exchange with Mary made rethink Threepio's role as a protocol droid built to serve other human beings in a slavish capacity. If C-3PO looks and acts like a person-if uses language, has certain advanced cognitive skills, is aware of surroundings, and can feel emotions and impress concerns-then what really separates him from actually being a person, other than his silicon metallic innards and appearance? Furthermore, if he could qualify as person, then shouldn't such a robot be granted the same kinds of rights privileges as any other human being who qualifies as a person? If droids meet the conditions for personhood, I question whether they should granted at least limited rights and privileges, including the ability choose to work in the Star Wars galaxy, as opposed to being slavishly to suffer, it's our lot in life" (to use Threepio's words) at the hands biological persons.

"He's Quite Clever, You Know... For a Human Being"

The first thing we need to do is get at the fundamental nature or essence of what it means to be a person. So, what is the definition of a

person? A person is a being who has the capacity for (1) reason or rationality; (2) mental states like beliefs, intentions, desires, and emotions; (3) language; (4) entering into social rela-lionships with other persons; and (5) being considered a responsible moral agent.

Before asking whether droids meet these criteria-and if so, which droids-we should consider the matter of whether a body absolutely necessary in order to be considered a person. Among the criteria personhood just given, there is no mention of a physical body. Important implications can be drawn from this omission. First, what it means to be person is not tied directly to having an intact bodily existence. someone like the famous physicist Stephen Hawking. Here is a man whose body is ravaged by disease, is confined to a wheelchair, and needs machines in order to communicate. Yet, we would still consider him a person because, despite his bodily limitations, he fulfills criteria (1)-(5). He does because his brain is still functioning properly and his cognitive capacities remain intact. He reasons, feels, communicates (albeit, with help of machines), and has been able to form strong social bonds in scientific community, as well as in his personal life. So, on the face it, it appears that cognitive capacities are what to look for when trying to discern whether a being qualifies as a person, and the brain, something that functions like the brain, is the seat of this cognitive capacity.

If bodily existence is downplayed and cognitive capacities are what really count when defining a person, then droids like C-3PO and R2-D2 could be considered persons, provided their cognitive capacities are the same as other persons. We naturally think that persons will be biological entities

with brains who breathe air, metabolize carbohydrates, and take in water

for nourishment. Right now, however, it's possible to simulate various

biological parts of bodies artificially; there are artificial hearts, $% \left(\frac{1}{2}\right) =\frac{1}{2}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right) +\frac{1}{2}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right) +\frac{1}{$

artificial kidneys, and even artificial eyes.

Suppose that a scientist develops an artificial occipital lobe (the

back part of the brain) out of silicon and metal, and implants it into the

brain of an adult female human being. The artificial lobe performs the same

functions that a natural occipital lobe performs: it processes visual

information from the environment. So, with her artificial lobe she can do

the same thing that she could do with her natural lobe-she can see the

world around her. Say that the scientist develops artificial silicon and

metallic parts of the brain responsible for memory, and implants these into

our subject's brain. She now can store and recall memories with the

artificial parts of the brain in the same way she could with her natural

parts. Now, say the scientist develops an artificial silicon and metal

brain in its entirety, and implants it into our subject. With this

artificial brain, she can do all of the same things she did before her

transplant; she lives, loves, lies, and meets all of the criteria for

personhood. Would she actually be a person, however, given that her brain

is robotic? Say the scientist can simulate all parts of her body with

silicon and metal, and thus replaces her biological body with a robotic

body. She now is fully a robotic being with all of the same hopes, fears,

responsibilities, loyalties, and so on, as any other human being. Would she

(or should we say it?) actually be a person?

It seems possible to simulate the mental capacities necessary for personhood through physical things other than the brain. Why would one need

to have a brain in order to think, believe, feel, experience, and the like, $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right$

if such cognitive capacities can be simulated by other means? Think of an

android like Data in Star Trek: The Next Generation, or the replicants in

the movie Blade Runner, or the synthetics like Bishop (as Bishop says they $\ensuremath{\mathsf{S}}$

prefer to be called) in the Alien movies. These are examples of beings that

act like persons, yet the internal workings of their "brains" consist of a

series of silicon and metallic connections, or other artificial systems, $\ensuremath{\mathsf{S}}$

that are very different from the gray matter of the brain. So it seems that

a functioning brain, or something that functions like a brain, with all of

the cognitive capacities associated with such functioning, is the most

important thing to consider when determining whether something qualifies as

a person.

"If Droids Could Think, There'd Be None of Us Here, Would There?"

Now we can address the $\ensuremath{\operatorname{question}}$ as to whether droids qualify as

persons. The first qualification has to do with the capacity for reason or

rationality. In one sense, reasoning is the same thing as intelligence, and

involves a variety of capacities, including (a) calculating; (b) making

associations between present stimuli and stored memories; (c) problem

solving; and (d) drawing new conclusions or inferences from old

information.4 Do droids qualify as rational or intelligent in these senses?

Droids obviously make calculations. In The Empire Strikes Back, $\,$ C-3PO

lets Han Solo know that the odds of successfully navigating an asteroid

field are approximately 3,720 to one against. Also, in The Phantom Menace

Droidekas judge distances while rolling up to, and firing their lasers at, $\ensuremath{\text{a}}$

Qui-Gon and Obi-Wan aboard the Trade $\,$ Federation $\,$ ship. Droids $\,$ also have

memory storage capabilities, and can recall memories based upon present

stimuli. When Jabba's droid manager, EV-9D9, notes that R2-D2 will make a

fine addition to Jabba's sail barge crew, he can do so only because he has

a memory of the barge, the crew, the work detail, as well as a capacity to

associate Artoo's actions with the barge, crew, and work detail. C-3PO

knows "six million forms of communication," has been on many adventures

with Artoo, and is able to recount his past experiences to Luke-he even

recounts the story of the previous Star Wars films to the Ewoks in Return

of the Jedi. Furthermore, droids can solve problems. In Return of the Jedi,

Artoo takes the initiative to open the door to the command center on $\ensuremath{\mathsf{Endor}}$

while he, Leia, and Han are under attack by stormtroopers. Artoo performs

similar mechanical problem-solving when he gets the Millennium Falcon's

hyperdrive to work in The Empire Strikes Back and the Naboo Royal

Starship's shields up to escape the Trade Federation blockade in The

Phantom Menace.

Finally, droids seem to be able to reason by deductively drawing

conclusions and making inferences. Think of the holographic chess game

played between Artoo and Chewbacca on board the Millennium Falcon in A $_{\rm New}$

Hope, and Han's comment that "droids don't pull people's arms out of their

sockets when they lose. Wookiees are known to do that." C-3PO comes to the

conclusion that Artoo should choose "a new strategy. Let the Wookiee win."

This conclusion is arrived at by a process of reasoning that goes something $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

like this:

- 1. Premise 1: If Artoo wins, my arms will be pulled out of their sockets.
 - 2. Premise 2: I don't want my arms pulled out of their sockets.

3. Conclusion: Thus, Artoo should let the Wookiee win.

Artoo also displays some clever deductive reasoning in his first conversation with Luke. He deceives Luke into removing his restraining bolt by falsely claiming that its removal will enable the image of Princess Leia to return, knowing how much Luke would want to see the entire message. The little manipulator appears to have reasoned his actions through quite well.

"I Am Fluent in Over Six Million Forms of Communication"

Just because something can reason does not mean that it is a person. A computer can be trained to reason in the same way that C-3PO does with Chewbacca, or Artoo does with Luke - making step-by-step calculations-yet, we would not consider a computer a person because of this capacity alone.5

Persons have the capacity for mental states and language. Mental states are a part of a human being's psychological life and include such things as holding a belief, having a desire, feeling a pain, or experiencing some event.

Probably the best way to understand what a mental state consists of is to close your eyes and think about experiences where you felt some pain, jumped for joy, or regretted a decision you made. First, think about the pain you experienced. Maybe it had to do with touching something that was very hot. Recall how that pain was all-consuming for its duration, how it lingered in your body, and how you thought, "Ow! That hurt! (and maybe expressed some other choice intergalactic expletives). That was your pain, and no one else's; only you could know what that pain was like. Only Han knows what his pain is like when the hydrospanners fall on his head in The

Empire Strikes Back. All we can know is that he experienced pain based on his vocal expression: "Ow!... Chewie!"

Now, recall a time when you felt joy and elation over some accomplishment of your own or of someone else's, like winning an award, or your favorite team scoring the winning goal in the last seconds of the game. Recall the experience: how you smiled, relished the moment, and wished that every moment could be like this one. Only Luke and Han know the joy of receiving a medal for heroism from the beautiful Princess Leia at the end of A New Hope-poor Chewie doesn't get to have that experience himself.

Finally, think of a decision you made that you have come to regret.
You believe now that you could have made a different, better decision back then. And now, having thought about it, it may cause you pain. Surely many such regrets passed through the dying Anakin Skywalker's mind after his redemption at the end of Return ofthejedi.

These three experiences seem to get at the idea of a mental state because they entail beliefs, emotions, desires, and intentions. It would seem that only members of the human race experience such mental states. We don't have any evidence of other animals realizing that their pain is their pain, relishing moments, thinking back to past events with regret, or looking forward to future events with joy and anticipation.

The capacity for language is another qualification for being considered a person. Language is a tricky thing to understand, and many people think that each kind of animal has its own language, including bees, ants, apes, dolphins, and even Tauntauns (just to name a few). We must

distinguish, though, between communicating some information and speaking a

language. Whereas communicating some information does not require having

mental states, speaking a language does entail mental states. When speaking

a language, it seems that more than mere information is communicated;

beliefs, desires, intentions, hopes, dreams, fears, and the like are

relayed from one person to another.

Many beings can communicate information by relaying some useful data

back and forth to one another. All animals do this to some extent. A bee is

not speaking to another bee when doing his little bee dance in order to

communicate information about where pollen is located outside of the hive.

I know this is going to sound controversial, but even apes who have been

taught sign-language are not speaking (using a language) to their trainers;

they merely are associating stimuli with stored memories. As far as we

know, no bees or apes have experiences of joy, hope, or anticipation to

communicate.

Do droids have capacities for mental states and language? There are

plenty of examples of droids apparently engaged in behaviors expressive of

mental states and language. One glaring example is the torturing of a droid

at Jabba the Hutt's palace in Return of the jedi. When the droid's "feet"

are burned, the little guy appears to know what is going on, anticipates

the pain he's going to experience, and screams in pain and terror when

hot iron is lowered. (Interestingly enough, one also gets the sense that

the droid administering the torture is enjoying what he's doing.)

C-3PO expresses emotions himself on numerous occasions. Before getting

into an escape pod with Artoo he claims, "I'm going to regret this." On

Tatooine he despairs, "How did we get into this mess... We seem to be made

to suffer; it's our lot in life." After reuniting with Artoo in the Jawa

sandcrawler, Threepio exclaims, "R2-D2! It is you! It is you!" When Luke

comes back to discover Artoo has gone off to look for Obi-Wan Kenobi, he

finds Threepio hiding (expressive of shame) and begging not to be

deactivated (expressive of fear). When Luke returns to Yavin Four after

destroying the Death Star, and Threepio realizes that Artoo has been

damaged, he offers his <>wn body parts in order to save his little friend.

In The Empire Strikes Back, C-3PO expresses sorrow and reverence when Luke

cannot be located before the main doors of the Hoth outpost $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right)$ are shut for

the night (because Luke likely will freeze to death), frustration at having

Han's hand placed over his mouth in order to shut him up, as well as fear

before being shot by stormtroop-ers on Cloud City.

C-3PO exhibits many more examples of anticipation, fear, anger, joy,

as well as put-downs ("you near-sighted scrap-pile" and "overweight glob

grease," directed toward Artoo) and p.issive aggression ("fine, go

way, you'll be malfunctioning in a day," again directed toward
Artoo).

Threepio and Artoo share a very human-like, personable relationship wrought

with the same kinds of normal, as well as abnormal, communication that any

person may have in relationships. This is probably $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

appealing as characters-sometimes more so than the actual human characters $% \left(\frac{1}{2}\right) =0$

in the films. Think of the brief exchange between Threepio and Artoo in ${\tt A}$

New Hope after Luke leaves for dinner with his aunt and uncle, Artoo asks

C-3PO if Luke "likes him" and C-3PO responds, "No, I don't think he likes

you at all. (Plaintive whistle from Artoo). No! I don't like you either."

It's an adorable scene to the viewer precisely because the communication is

tongue-in-cheek and somewhat dysfunctional. It would seem that this kind of

communication takes place only between beings having true mental states.

Besides having and expressing emotions, droids also seem to have

beliefs about themselves, others, and the world around them. And $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left$

on those beliefs whether it is to save themselves, aid others, or engage in

other kinds of actions. Put another way, they appear to be free in their

actions precisely because they form beliefs and can act on those beliefs.

In A New Hope, while storm troopers are searching Mos $\,$ Eisley, $\,$ C-3PO $\,$ holds

the belief that if Artoo locks the door to the room in which they are

hiding, then the stormtroopers will check the door, note that it is locked,

and move on. Sure enough, that's exactly what happens and Threepio's belief

is ratified. When Artoo is roaming by himself on Tatooine near caves where

Jawas are hiding, he holds the belief that danger is near, adjusts his

direction, and rotates his head back and forth to keep an eye out for the $\ensuremath{^{\text{the}}}$

suspected danger. He engages in these actions precisely because he holds

the belief that danger is near.

Finally, droids have the capacity for language. When Artoo beeps

series of electronic sounds into Luke's computer on board his X-wing

fighter, or to Threepio for translation, this isn't merely an expression of

data communication. Language is dependent upon and expressive of true

mental states. It would appear that droids have mental states, and so when

they communicate it would appear that what's being communicated constitutes

linguistic expression, and not simply data transference. Droids want other

droids and other beings to understand what they are communicating. I want

you to understand what I'm experiencing, feeling, thinking, and the like,

when I speak to you. So too, when Threepio tries to reassure Luke that

Artoo is a reliable droid (while the two are being sold by the $\mbox{\tt Jawas}$), he

wants Luke to understand where he's coming from in $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

about Artoo being a "real bargain."

"You've Been a Great Pal... I'll Make Sure Mom Doesn't Sell You"

 $\,$ Do droids have the capacity to enter into $\,$ social $\,$ relationships $\,$ with

other persons? Social relationships can be divided into: (a) family

relationships, such as Luke's relationship with his Uncle Owen and Aunt

Beru; (b) economic relationships, such as Han Solo or Boba Fett's

relationship with Jabba the Hutt; (c) allegiance relationships, such as

those among the multi-species members of the Rebel Alliance; and (d) civil

relationships, such as the relationship among the citizens of Naboo, and

between them and their elected queen.8 In each one of these relationships,

one finds duties, rights, laws, and obligations that would be appropriate

to each relationship. For example, in a family a parent has a duty to take

care of a child, and one of the fundamental "laws" in such a relationship

is unconditional love. In economic transactions, the fundamental obligation $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

is to the "bottom line" of staying in the black, and the law may include

something like "let the buyer beware" or "don't drop your spice shipment at

the first sign of an Imperial cruiser." In civil relationships, rights and

laws are utilized in the most commonly understood way so as to protect $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left($

citizens from harm, and ensure the prospering of societies as a whole.

On the face of it, it would seem that droids don't have the capacity

to enter into any one of these relationships. After all, they don't have

families, they seem to be barred from economic transactions ("We don't

serve their kind here," declares the bar-lender at the Mos Eisley cantina),

they aren't a part of any "droid" interest groups, and they definitely

aren't citizens who bear any rights in either the Republic or the Rebel

Alliance. I Iowever, two scenes in The Empire Strikes Back make it possible

to believe that a kind of familial relationship can be fostered between a

droid and a non-droid. First, we note the care and concern Chewie takes

when he tries to put C-3PO back together in the cell on Cloud City, and

later when he straps C-3PO to his back so as not to abandon him while he

and Leia try to free Han and flee from Vader. There is also Luke's reaction

to Artoo's falling into the swamp after they land on Dagobah.

expresses shock, concern, and is even willing to fight to save Artoo from

being eaten by whatever monster sucked him up (and subsequently spit \lim

out). The care expressed in both of these cases is analogous to the care \boldsymbol{a}

father might have for his son, or an older brother might have for a younger

brother. These characters form a kind of family.

Droids also seem to care for their "masters," as in The Empire Strikes

Back when Artoo sits at the foot of the door probing for Luke who is

out in the cold on Hoth, or in Attack of the Clones when C-3PO's head

realizes (to his shock!) that his battle droid body is shooting at friendly

Jedi in the arena on Geonosis: "I'm terribly sorry about all of this!"

indicates, at the very least, a rudimentary reciprocal social relationship.

Yet, droids are exploited. They are treated as little more than pieces

of machinery-slaves whose purpose is to serve non-droids. Threepio and

Artoo are hunted down, fitted with restraining bolts, and sold by Jawas

into slavery. And Threepio refers to his previous "master" when giving his

work history to Luke in their initial conversation. Droids lack the rights

and responsibilities afforded to other beings such as humans and $\mbox{Wookiees,}$

as well as fish-headed and hammerheaded creatures in the Star Wars galaxy.

Given what we know about droids such as Artoo and Threepio, it is

unfortunate that they are treated as slaves. Droids communicate, have the

capacity for reason, and can be involved in complex social relationships.

More importantly, they express feelings of disillusion, contempt, pain, and

suffering, as well as joy, satisfaction, and contentment. A being that has

these traits appears to have mental states, and such a being is arguably a

person, regardless of having been created by persons.

Maybe it's time for droid liberation in the Star Wars galaxy, in $\mbox{\sc much}$

the same way that other groups of people who have been unjustly enslaved

throughout human history have been liberated. Of course, if droids were

liberated, then they would need to establish their own social

relationships, ways to propagate moral laws, and the like, for themselves.

At the same time, there would need to be adjustments made in the existing

social spheres of the Star Wars galaxy to accommodate droid needs and

wants, and to mainstream them into existing social spheres, in much the

same way Wookiees, Gungans, and other creatures have been incorporated.

It's Not Our Lot in Life!

I have a proposal to make. Droids appear to meet the qualifications

for personhood, so droids should be granted limited rights and privileges.

The practical specifics of what that means would need to be worked out by

the Galactic Senate. However, such limited rights and privileges minimally

would include the choice to work for human beings, as opposed to being

slavishly "made to suffer, it's our lot in life" (to use Threepio's words

in A New Hope) at the hands of humans. I realize, however, that giving them

the choice to work for humans probably means that we would be granting them

a person-like status, in which case we are well on our way to recognizing

droids as deserving of the same kinds of rights and privileges afforded to any other person.

The case can be made that droids are an oppressed group in the Star

Wars galaxy. Perhaps we ought to cheer for a droid rebellion against an

organic empire? The issue of treating droids as persons may seem silly to

talk about because, after all, it's just a make-believe story! As history

has proven, though, science fiction has a way of becoming science fact. The

famous robotics engineer and theorist, Hans Moravec, claims that by $2050\,$

robots actually will surpass humans in intellectual capacity.? The way in

which advances in computer and robotic technology are being made at an

astronomical rate gives us cause to pause and consider that, in the not-so- $\!\!\!$

distant future, there most likely will be advanced forms of machinery that

behave much like C-3PO and R2-D2. How then, will the organic community

react? How should such non-organic persons who seem to behave like organic

persons be treated?

"Size Matters Not": The Force as the Causal Power of the Jedi

JAN-ERIK JONES

Before Luke meets Obi-Wan Kenobi, his life is relatively uneventful.

The only thing he wants is to leave Tatooine and enroll at the Academy.

While living on his Uncle Owen's farm he has no idea of the kind of power

he has at his disposal. As fate would have it, Luke and Obi-Wan meet and

his odyssey to help restore balance to the Force begins.

The Force, Obi-Wan tells us "is what gives the Jedi his power. It's an energy field created by all living things. It surrounds us and

energy field created by all living things. It surrounds us and penetrates

us. It binds the galaxy together." The appeal of the Force to viewers of

Star Wars is that it gives the Jedi power over the physical world in ways

that defy the natural order of events with which we are familiar. In our

world, lifting an X-wing fighter from a swamp would require more than

mental focus and control over our emotions. And as Qui-Gon, Obi-Wan, and

Yoda teach Anakin and Luke about the Force and how to use it, we can't help

but wish we had that kind of power over our environment.

The reason why the Force in Star Wars has such a grip on the viewer's $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1$

imagination is because it makes us ask the fundamental metaphysical

questions that have driven science and philosophy from the beginning;

questions about cause and effect, the laws of nature, the possibility of

foreknowledge, and the relationship between the mind and the physical world.

The Source of the Jedi's Power

The Force is described in two very different ways in Star Wars. First, $\ensuremath{\mathsf{First}}$

Obi-Wan describes it as an omnipresent energy field created by all living

things that binds the galaxy together. Obi-Wan thus makes it sound as if

the Force depends on living things for its existence, while causing the

galaxy itself to cohere. Indeed, this latter feature of it makes it sounds

like one of the fundamental causal laws of the universe, akin to gravity or

electro-magnetism.

Qui-Gon Jinn, on the other hand, tells us that there are some

symbionts, called "midi-chlorians," that live in large concentrations in

potential Jedi and convey the will of the Force to their host. If Qui-Gon

is right, the Force has some sort of awareness and a will or preference

about how things go in the universe. The Force also provides the Jedi with (among other powers) occasional glimpses into the future and gives

their unique psychokinetic power-the ability to move things with their

minds.

While these two accounts are not irreconcilable, the Force, as described by both, plays at least two roles: it explains the Jedi's special knowledge and it's a causal power. While both of these issues have a long and interesting philosophical history, I'll limit myself to discussing

the latter: "What is the nature of causation?" And, perhaps, the answer to

might allow us to speculate on the nature of the Force.

We know that causes and effects are all around us. And we've learned to predict how objects will behave from observing some typical cause and effect interactions. But one thing that we learn from fantastical scifi inventions like the Force is that there could be kinds of causes and effects that are so foreign to us that we'd have no idea how they work, even though we'd recognize them as causes and effects. We thus have to ask ourselves what is required for something to be a real cause of an effect.

When we use the words "cause and effect," we refer to a specific kind of relationship between two or more objects, but just what do we mean by the word "cause" that makes it apply to both familiar and unfamiliar (sci-fi) cases? And if we can answer this, then we'll also have an answer to the question of what the difference is between a true cause of an effect and a mere coincidence.

We might say that since causes and effects are part of our scientific vocabulary, then we should look to science to answer this $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

all, who would know more about causes and effects better than the people

who deal with them professionally? And surely a scientist can tell the

difference between a true cause and a mere coincidence!

While this is a natural response, I should point out that even though

scientists talk of cause and effect, the concept of causation itself is a

philosophical one. What it means to say that some event caused another

event has to be determined before the scientist can employ the term "cause"

in any theory; for the meaning of "cause" is not understood as the result

of experimental data or any amount of measuring. Rather, since experiments

and measurements are means of identifying or understanding the causes of

specific phenomena, the term itself must be understood before we $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left$

any measurements or experiments.

How, then, has philosophical analysis helped us understand what

term "cause" means? This very question was addressed by both the Scottish

philosopher David Hume and the German philosopher Gottfried Leibniz.

Indeed, their attempts to analyze the concepts of "causation" and "force"

led them to conclude that we cannot possibly possess $\,$ scientific knowledge

of these concepts. The reasons why will take us to the heart of why the

Force in Star Wars so thoroughly captivates our imagination; we seem to

recognize causes even if we have no way of explaining how they work. But in

order to see how we arrive at this startling conclusion, we must begin by

looking at what we think causes are and why the Force is a cause.

"Size Matters Not"

The Force is a special power that allows the Jedi to act on parts of the world without being in physical contact with those objects. It allows

them to move rocks, spaceships, lightsabers, and droids, apparently by using only the mind. And unlike physical and mechanical forces in our world, the size of the objects moved doesn't matter; as Yoda puts it, "Size matters not." These objects, we suppose, wouldn't behave that way without the Jedi being there and willing them to behave that way. So the Force is part of the cause of these events. But the question remains, "What is a cause?"

When we think of a cause, we usually think of an object or event that produces some kind of change; the cause of Alderaan's destruction is the Death Star. But causes also explain non-changing states as well; we speak of the cause of one's health or the cause of the world's existence. So causes are part of our explanations for why things are the way they are, and why things undergo the changes they do. But what makes some event a case of causation rather than mere chance? There has to be some set of conditions that must be met in order to be a true cause. Here's where David Hume comes in.

David Hume (1711-1776)1 points out that a true cause has three features: temporal priority-the cause comes before the effect; contact-the cause must be in physical contact with what it effects; and there must be a necessary connection between the cause and effect-some law-like connection or reason why the event we call "the cause" must always produce the event we call "the effect."

A necessary connection between cause and effect is the kind of connection that would not only rule out coincidence, but would show why the effect must be the result of the cause; so that if we knew everything about the cause, we could deduce with perfect accuracy exactly what the effect

would be. For example, if the motion in the cue-ball is the cause of the

motion in the two-ball that it hits, then there must be a necessary

connection between the motion of the cue-ball and the resulting $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

the two-ball. So if we knew what that necessary connection was, then we

could tell long before it happened exactly how and why the $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

affect the two-ball, even if we'd never seen any billiard balls collide

before. If there were a necessary connection between Luke's willing for his

lightsaber in the ice cave on Hoth and the motion of the lightsaber to his

hand, then, if we had a knowledge of that connection, we would know (prior

to seeing it happen) how and why the lightsaber would fly to his hand.

Necessary connections are part of the explanations of how and why causes

produce their effects.

Hume then asks, "What observations do we have of necessary connections $\ensuremath{\mathsf{Connections}}$

between events?" None. According to Hume, we have no knowledge of causes

and effects because we have no knowledge of the most important ingredient:

the necessary connection between them.

What we observe when we see, for example, a moving cueball

approaching a stationary billiard ball, is the motion of the cueball,

followed by contact between the balls, and then the motion in the second

ball. But no matter how closely or frequently we examine these events,

we'll never observe the necessary connection between them. We never observe

that feature of their interaction that makes it so that the second ball

must move when contacted by the moving cue-ball-it's entirely possible that

the second ball won't move at all after the collision.

The lack of knowledge of any necessary connections means that, no

matter how many times we observe the same thing, we can still imagine the

second ball not moving after the collision As Hume puts it, "From the mere $\$

repetition of any past impres-sion, even to infinity, there will never

arise any new original idea, such as that of a necessary connexion."2

we observe is that one kind of event is constantly followed by another kind

of event; and so we develop a habit of expecting some kinds of events from

the observation of others. Yet there's no absurdity or impossibility in the

typical effect not occurring when the familiar cause does. (Quantum physics

tell us that the same causal conditions can have different effects at $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left($

different times.)

Since, according to Hume, we never observe the necessary connection $\ensuremath{\mathsf{Since}}$

between cause and effect, we have no knowledge of causation, just a habit

of expecting certain kinds of events to be followed by other kinds of

events. Causation is thus a mysterious concept. After $\$ all, $\$ how $\$ does the

mass of the earth cause the moon to stay in orbit, or cause earthly objects

to fall? How does a magnet attract iron to it? Describing the causal

mechanism in these kinds of interactions as a force fails to explain how

that force does what it does. And in these cases, not only is the necessary

connection unobserved, but contact between the objects appears to be

missing too!

No matter how many times we see Jedi toppling legions of battle droids

with the flick of their hands, we'll never observe the necessary connection $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left($

between the motion in the Jedi's hands and the toppling of the battle

droids. We'll only observe that the one kind of event is followed by the

other. But this doesn't show us that they are necessarily connected. After

all, experience tells us that hand-flicking and the toppling of objects at $\ensuremath{\mathsf{L}}$

a distance is not typical!

The Force in Star Wars violates our expectations because it too operates in ways quite mysterious to us. It's by the use of the Force that
Luke draws his out-of-reach lightsaber to his hand in the wampa's ice cave on Hoth. This kind of attractive force is just as mystifying to us as some of the causation we regularly experience, like gravity. So why can't we lift a spacecraft from a swamp with our minds alone? What prevents that in our universe?

The Power that Keeps On Giving

We learned from Hume that no observation can amount to observation of a true cause. All we have is the habit of expecting things to behave in certain way. But what if we decided that Hume is wrong? What if said that "the reason causes produce their effects in the case of the billiard balls is that the cue-ball transfers its motion to the ball it hits"? problem with this, however, is that, as Gottfried Leibniz (1646-1716) us, this concept of transferring motion is just as problematic as alleged necessary connection. Leibniz, one of the inventors of calculus a contributor to the scientific revolution of the seventeenth century, argued that the concept of causation between distinct substances is incoherent.

Since Aristotle, one of the fundamental philosophical and scientific concepts has been "substance." To be a substance is to be a thing with properties. For example, we might describe Yoda as a substance because he is a thing that has properties, such as being old and green, and a thing that moves, talks, is conscious, has a body, and is capable of moral reasoning. These properties depend on the existence of a thing which has

them. If the substance of Yoda were annihilated, then there would be* nothing to have these "Yoda" properties; there must be' something to be old, green, in motion, conscious, and so on. So substances are things that have properties, and properties depend on substances for their existence.

According to Leibniz, the concept of causation includes the transfer of motion or other properties from one substance (a cue-ball) to another substance (a two-ball). This means that causation is a kind of giving. So, in addition to the concept of substance, we need the further concept of causation as giving. We often think of a cause as an object giving its own properties to another object-the particles in a lightsaber give some of their motion to the particles of metal in a blast-door causing it to heat up. It follows then that causes must have the properties they give to their effects; a lightsaber cannot cause a blast-door to be hot unless it has heat itself.

Now, as Leibniz argues in his Monadology, one body cannot cause a change in another:

There is also no way of explaining how a [substance] can be altered or changed internally by some other creature... [Properties] cannot be detached, nor can they go about outside of substances... Thus, neither substance nor [properties] can enter a [substance] from without.

If one physical object, say a cue-ball, were to have a property, say motion, and if that cue-ball were to cause motion in a (presently) stationary eight-ball, then the cue-ball would have to transfer some of its motion to the eight-ball. But how does one substance transfer one of its own properties to another substance? As we've said, since properties are

properties of something-they're not free-floating, but attached to

substances - then the property of motion can't be given from the cueball

to the eight-ball without some part of the cue-ball's substance moving from

the cue-ball to the eight-ball as well. But this doesn't happen; bodies

don't cause motion in other bodies by giving up part of themselves. When

Luke causes C-3PO to rise in the air, he doesn't transfer any of his own

substance to C-3PO's chair. So causation as the giving of $\$ properties from

one body to another, Leibniz argues, can't happen.

The Force, however, is not this kind of causation. When a Jedi knocks

over a line of battle droids, he doesn't transfer some of his motion to the

droids. And certainly we don't think that all causation includes the

transfer of properties in this way. What's being given to the glass by the

diamond that cuts it? What property of the earth is given to the falling

body? But if we reject this model of causation, then we're stuck with the

problem of figuring out exactly what all instances of causation have in $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

common, by virtue of which they are causes.

"There's [Not] One All-Powerful Force Controlling Everything"

If Hume is right, we have no knowledge of causation because we lack

any observations of the main component of causes: the necessary connection

between the cause and the effect. And if the account of causation he

examines is correct, which requires that causes be limited to bodies in

contact with each other, then things like gravity and electromagnetic force

don't obviously count as causes. On the other hand, if Leibniz is right,

the problem is how we account for causes in a way other than substances

transferring properties. So the concept of causation is in deep trouble;

there seems to be no way to clearly understand how an alleged cause

produces its alleged effect.

This conclusion, however, seems to be too much to swallow. Most of us believe that there's a difference between a true cause and effect and a mere coincidence. But what's that difference? One likely candidate would be natural laws. One of the features we tend to include in our concept of cause, which seems to help us exclude explanations like coincidence, is law-guided uniformity. The principle of uniformity says that similar causes produce similar effects. A better way to put it is that changes or interactions between objects are governed by general laws so that every time an event of a certain type occurs, the laws dictate that effects of a certain type will follow.

So, in the Star Wars universe, the laws could be such that every time a Jedi desires to draw his lightsaber to his hand from across the room, Force makes it happen. Of course, this doesn't solve the problem because doesn't tell us why it happens, or what makes this law able to produce these kinds of interactions; only that in this kind of universe the make it happen. If one of the lessons we learned through Hume and Leibniz is that explaining how causes do their work is too difficult, then maybe ought to think of causes and their effects as somehow correlated (we that the two events are related to each other, for example, whenever Vader gets frustrated, another admiral bites the dust) in what seems to a law-governed way and give up trying to figure out whether or how they are necessarily connected.

There are, however, two features of this suggestion that we ought to notice. First, the fact that we describe these causal interactions as law-

governed presupposes that there's some natural connection between certain

events, so that whenever an event of one kind occurs, it'll be followed by

an event of another kind. And secondly, even if we thought that causes and

effects were merely probabilistically related, so that whenever some kinds

of events occur, then it's likely that an event of a certain kind will

follow, that still would presuppose that there's a natural and law-governed

connection between the events; oth erwise, we wouldn't have a reason to

think of these events causally related. But what evidence could we have of

such law-governed connection?

The obvious answer is that we have the evidence of a long train of

past observations. Whenever Darth Vader exerts pressure on the throats of

people, as many Imperial officers have discovered, they choke. And this

happens every time Vader exerts pressure on their throats. So the cause of

the choking is the pressure on the throat. So, we may infer, that next time

Vader exerts pressure on someone's throat, it will cause them to choke too.

This appears to be a reasonable inference based on experience, and one that

incompetent Imperial officers ought to keep in mind!

And if there are such law-governed connections, they would allow us to

make accurate predictions based on past evidence. So the earmarks of ${\tt a}$

natural causal law include observations that whenever events of a certain

type (Darth Vader willing the asphyxiation of an Imperial officer) occur,

they're followed by events of a certain type (the choking of the officer),

and these observations will typically allow us to make accurate predictions

of similar events employing the described conditions. Hume, however, $\mbox{\sc argues}$

that this kind of argument is deeply flawed. We can't generalize from past

experience that there's a law-governed connection between events unless we

use circular reasoning-that is, we assume the truth of what we want to prove in order to prove it.

Laws of nature are general descriptions of how all matter behaves all over the universe whether we observe it or not. But how are such laws ever justifiable? How are we to justify a claim about how all matter must behave all over the universe at all times? We can't-at least not by observation. So is there an argument to show that there are laws of nature?

Well, we might argue that since the suns of Tatooine have always risen and set in the same way everyday, and they seem to be behaving in typical way now, it's reasonable to infer that they will continue to do in the future because there is a law of nature guiding their motion. Hume points out, this argument only works if we have reasons for thinking that past regularity is evidence of future regularity. There are lots things that were true in the past, and are true now, but will not be in future; that's why people buy insurance. In The Empire Strikes Back, might have been true to say that Darth Vader had always obeyed the Emperor, and is now obeying the Emperor. But can we infer that he will always the Emperor in the future? Not unless tossing him down the second Death Star's reactor shaft counts as obedience!

The only way to justify our belief that the future will resemble the past, such that things that were true in the past will remain true in the future, is if we had reasons for thinking that nature is orderly. But nature is orderly only if there are laws of nature. That is, past regularity is only evidence of future regularity if there are laws of nature, but this is what the conclusion of the argument is supposed to

establish. This argument would be circular because we can't assume that

there are laws of nature in order to prove that there are laws of nature!

So, Hume concludes, there is no non-circular argument which shows us that

there are laws of nature.

Failing to specify how causes and effects are correlated allows things

like coincidence, magic, wishful thinking, and the Force to count as true

causes. But that's not something we can tolerate as a scientific society.

It's precisely the account of how the laws regulate events that

distinguishes true causes from non-causes. But if we can't legitimately

establish that there are laws of nature, then we're in no position to claim

that these laws explain what is required to be true causes. So laws of

nature can't ground our distinction between true causes and non-causes.

In sum, while we deeply believe that there are differences between

real causes and pseudo-causes, precisely articulating and justifying those

differences has eluded us. What this leaves us with is experiment and

probability. In our search for an account of specific cause and effect

relationships we must experiment to provide reasons for thinking that the

correlations we observe between $\mbox{ specific kinds of events isn't } \mbox{merely}$

coincidental. And while we may never be absolutely certain about the truth

of our conclusions, we need not embrace Han Solo's famous words: "it's all

a lot of simple tricks and nonsense."

"May The Force Be with You"

This discussion doesn't show that there are no causes or laws of

nature, nor does it show that inquiry into the meaning of "causation" is

fruitless. But it does seem to show that our thinking about causation isn't

yet precise enough to do the kind of work we'd like it to. Indeed, our term

"cause" probably doesn't pick out any single kind of interaction, but

rather refers to a whole host of different kinds of interactions. Moreover,

like causation, the Force remains a deeply mysterious concept to us;

neither one is easy to define and explain, but we have no trouble

recognizing them. And what's more disconcerting is that, from how we use

the term, the Force qualifies as a kind of cause, even though we remain

deeply puzzled by how the Force does what it does!

What makes this distressing is that most accounts of what makes

science scientific is its ability to identify and explain true causes and

distinguish them from pseudo-causes such as magic or mystical powers. This

is probably what prompted England's Nobel laureate and philosopher Bertrand

Russell in 1929 to say that we should eliminate the word "cause" from our

vocabulary. As he puts it: "The Law of causality, I believe... is a relic

of a bygone age, surviving, like the monarchy, only because it is

erroneously supposed to do no harm."

In the end, this essay is a plug for science fiction; after all,

science fiction and fantasy allow us to examine possible ways this world

could've been different, compelling us to analyze our scientific and

philosophical concepts in a way that helps us get clear about what our

concepts mean. What we mean by "cause" is a very important question, and

one that the fictional reality of the $\,$ Force $\,$ allows $\,$ us to $\,$ examine more

deeply than we would otherwise.

The Force Is with Us: Hegel's Philosophy of Spirit Strikes Back at the Empire

JAMES LAWLER

Central to the unfolding plot of Star Wars is a question and a

mystery: What is the Force? In A New Hope, Obi-Wan Kenobi tells Luke

Skywalker that his father was betrayed and murdered by Darth Vader, a Jedi

Knight who "turned to evil... seduced by the Dark Side of the Force."

Force?" asks Luke. Obi-Wan replies: "The Force is what gives the Jedi

power. It's an energy field created by all living things. It surrounds us

and penetrates us. It binds the galaxy together."

All living beings create the energy field of the $\mbox{Force,}$ and at the

same time this energy field is essential to living beings, binding the

entire galaxy-ultimately the entire cosmos-in a unified whole. The Force

has both Dark and Light sides, but there is not a Dark Force and a Light

Force, not Evil over against Good. Such a conception of good versus evil is

understandable in the context of Episodes IV through VI, dominated by the

malevolent Lord Vader. Even when we learn that Vader is actually Luke's

father, the news only deepens our sense of repulsion for the evil servant

of the Dark Side, which we maintain until the very last moment when Vader

unexpectedly turns against his Master-Darth Sidious, the Dark Lord of the

Sith and Emperor of the Galaxy-and dies reconciled to his son.

In the absence of the background trilogy of Episodes I to III, this

ending to the entire story lacks depth and a sense of conviction. However,

as the background story emerges, not only is the final ending fully

justified but our understanding of the nature of the Force becomes more

profound. We learn why there isn't a Dark Force and a Light Force, a Good

opposed to an Evil, but only one Force whose two sides must be brought into

balance. And we understand how it is that Darth Vader, formerly known as

Anakin Skywalker, is the Chosen One whose destiny it is to bring about this balance.

Thanks to the background story, Vader's death-bed conversion to the acknowledgement of love is no artificial happy ending, but the outcome of what Georg Wilhelm Friedrich Hegel, at the conclusion of his Phenomenology of Spirit, calls "the Calvary of Absolute Spirit."1 All life goes through transformations in which what at first appears to be evil turns out to be good, while the good must be crucified, as Jesus was on Mount Calvary, in order that a higher good be achieved. This transformation of light into dark and dark into light is the pathway of Spirit-Hegel's philosophically

probing conception of what George Lucas calls "the Force."

Mythic Journey of the Hero

Star Wars provides an unparalleled modern account of the archetypal journey of the hero into the nether world of darkness as a means of discovery and knowledge, of power and freedom, of love and fidelity. The Force is Lucas's distillation of religious thought and feeling throughout human history.2 In his understanding of this history, and at the core of Star Wars, the divine is no separate deity controlling events from the outside, but the inner God-force that impels the hearts and minds of all of us as we seek to fulfill our inner truth. Connecting with the Force gives the hero within each of us the insight and energy to rise to new levels of fulfillment.

Such an understanding of human destiny is clarified by the contrast between the religion of the Force and the secular view that the primary means for achieving human goals are provided by science and technology. The opposition of science and technology to the religion of the Force is presented from the start in A New Hope. Obi-Wan is training Luke with the aid of a robot ball that hovers in front of him, shooting laser beams as

Luke attempts to defend himself with his lightsaber. Han is skeptical.

"Hokey religions and ancient weapons are no match for a good blaster at

your side, kid." Luke comments, "You don't believe in the Force, do you?"

"Kid," says Han, "I've flown from one side of this galaxy to the $\,$

other. I've seen a lot of strange stuff, but I've never seen anything to

make me believe there's one all-powerful Force controlling $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

mystical energy field controls my destiny. It's all a lot of simple tricks

and nonsense." In the face of this skepticism, Luke demonstrates the

reality of the Force by blocking the laser attack with his eyes covered.

Han calls this luck. "In my experience," Says Obi-Wan, "there's no such

thing as luck."

There's no doubt in the minds of the audience that the Force is

something real, and that Han's reliance on empirical evidenc and

technological force is missing the deeper picture. But ho" seriously should

we ourselves take this idea of a mystical Fore When we think objectively

about it outside of the::ilm, when w ask ourselves what is really real,

don't we live most of our lives as Han Solo does, relying on external

technologies of power and control to achieve our goals, with little or no

confidence in the inner power of our own consciousness? With his idea of

the Force as an external controlling deity, Han fails to understand its

profound connection with the inner power of the human spirit.

For both the scientifically minded and conventional religious viewers $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1$

who believe in such an external deity, the Force is magic and makebelieve,

not something to be taken seriously outside the realm of film and fantasy.

However, this understanding of the Force only pushes the question of its

nature to a deeper level. What is the appeal of this magic? How does the $\,$

fantasy of Star Wars, with its magical drama of the Force, cast its spell on its audience? If we dismiss this force of fantasy itself, we too acting like the skeptical Han Solo, dismissing in our minds inessential and irrelevant the power of imagination that we nevertheless can feel-a power that holds us in its thrall throughout the many hours

artistic wizardry that makes up Star Wars? In his lightsaber training

lesson, Obi-Wan tells Luke: "let go your conscious self and act

instinct... Your eyes can deceive you. Don't trust them... Stretch out

your feelings." It isn't by thinking that we understand the Force. It's by

feeling. But feelings too are real.

Each episode of Star Wars begins with the same opening lines: "A long time ago in a galaxy far, far away..." We're put in mind of the opening lines of the fairy tale, "Once upon a time." Under the surface of technically advanced galactic society, we're invited to enter a realm of myth and magic and ancient religion. With Star Wars, George has created a myth for our time, the germ, in fact, of a new religionclothed in the garb of the future and the ancient spirit quest of the As the civilizations of our own time clash over rival theologies inherited

from the past, mankind is in need of an empowering belief for our time,

that provides a unifying distillation of all the world's religions.

appreciate the way in which Star Wars, with its heroic drama of the

responds to this need, we must first of all to let go of our conscious

minds and all dependence on empirical evidence, and stretch out with

feelings and imagination. We need to let ourselves be captured by the spell of magic.

Spirit: Hegel's Distillation of the History of Religion

Like Lucas, Hegel attempts to distill the essence of religion in his

Lectures on the Philosophy of Religion and other works. Religion, he

argues, is distinguished from science and philosophy in being a matter of

feeling and "picture thinking," rather than of rationality and conceptual

thought. The object of religion may be called God or Absolute Spirit, but

for the religious person such terms are labels for a peculiar object of

feeling and imagination, not concepts for rational inquiry. The ultimate

goal of the philosophy of religion is to justify the truth of religious

feeling by explaining the reality that it taps into-the all-encompassing

and dynamic reality of Spirit.3 Each civilization has its own religious

picture of the ultimate nature of reality, the tlivine, the God, the

Absolute Spirit. This picture reflects the kind of civilization it is, and

the stage of humanity's self-development that it represents. A scientific-

technological civilization that puts $\,$ Matter in place of $\,$ Spirit is no

exception to this rule.

Hegel traces a developmental pattern in the historical $\,$ succession of

religious beliefs, one that produces in effect a distillation of divinity.

In the succession of basic religious orientations, what one religion calls

"good" another religion denounces as evil or darkness. But for the final

distillation to appear it's necessary for the human spirit, on its heroic

journey to self-fulfillment, to find the balance between these opposites.

Human history begins with the divine in nature, as human beings living

off plants and animals in the wild are immersed in the natural world. For

such people there is no separation between the divine and the $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1$

the spirits of nature, human beings too wield magical power in controlling

the world around them by their wishes and in their dreams. This is the

childhood of humanity, Hegel says. The mindset of the child, who willingly

enters the fantasy of "once upon a time," is the $\ensuremath{\mathsf{general}}$ outlook of the

culture itself. As Yoda remarks in Attack of the Clones, "Truly wonderful

the mind of a child." This is also the general outlook of all the ancient

nature-centered cultures of the East, as exemplified in the Daoism of

China. Giving expression to this history, Star Wars appropriately

culminates with the battle between the monstrosities of the $\,$ most advanced $\,$

technological civilization and the slings and arrows of the nature people,

the Ewoks in Return of the jedi, who take C-3PO as a god. As a product of

the advanced civilization, though, the gentleman droid cannot accept

worship: "It's against my programming to impersonate a deity."

In the next major stage of human history, which takes place primarily

in the West, no one could mistake a physical object for a god. As human

beings develop greater technological powers over nature, together with

mighty systems of economic, social, and political power in which a small

number of people have immense control over the lives of the majority, the

divine is corn ceived of in the image of the rulers-a power radically

separate] from and ruling over the world. The progress of such separation

between the higher realm of the gods and the lower world of nature and

humans culminates in the slave empire of the ancient Romans. This slave

state, which subjects all conquered peoples to an order based on the might

of the Roman army, reduces everything sacred in life to an object of

utility for political purposes. Star Wars, with its portrayal of the slide

from Republic to Empire, borrows liberally from this Roman history-while

suggesting parallels with our own time.

To the individual trampled under by the overwhelming machine of deadly $% \left(\frac{1}{2}\right) =\frac{1}{2}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right) +\frac{1}{2}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right) +\frac{1}$

imperial force, the divine inevitably recedes to an "unattainable Beyond."

Hegel calls this dark but necessary moment of the journey of mankind "the

Unhappy Consciousness."6 All the childlike magic of life is gone. The Stoic

sage of the time of the Roman empire preaches detachment from emotional

involvement in the surrounding world, because the individual is thought to

be powerless to change matters governed by forces that are wholly outside

of our control. Epictetus advises: "If you kiss your child, or your wife,

say that you only kiss things which are human, and thus you will not

disturbed if either of them dies."? The Stoic recommends acquiescence to

external powers in the belief that whatever inscrutable plans the gods

orchestrated for humanity, there must be good in them. But the Skeptic

delights in refuting such beliefs as infantile by pointing to the empirical

testimony of hard realities. There's no all-powerful Force that masters the

universe, including the power of the Emperor himself. There's only my own

cunning, and the power of a good blaster, as the rebel Han Solo says.

We therefore see two opposite forms of religion in early world

history. From the earliest societies and the East, there is the divine as

an all-pervading natural force capable of emerging in the $\ \mbox{most}$ unexpected

objects, as in the Ewoks' vision of a divine C-3PO. From the beginnings of

Western civilizations the contrary concept emerges of an external divinity

that supposedly controls all, yet dwindles to being an "unattainable

Beyond." If there is to be a distillation of the essence of religion as the

core of a new myth for our time, it must combine these two opposite

conceptions of the divine. Just such a synthesis, Hegel argues, is

represented by the "Consummate Religion" of Christianity with its story of

a God who becomes a human babe, grows up with a family, enters upon his

mission, and accomplishes this mission only by dying the ignominious death on Mount Calvary of a criminal nailed to a cross.

What is this mission? To teach a people plunged in the darkness of world ruled by pitiless physical force that God is not a menacing power ruling over us, but the deepest inner reality of each person. It's inner Holy Spirit that binds us all together in a powerful unity that the irresistible Force by which we can resist and overcome all inner darkness and every outer unjust form of rule. Thus, at the peak of imperial power of Rome, intrepid bands of Christian rebels, believing divine Force has merged with the human spirit, began the long climb from world of Empire whose principle is that only one person is completely free, the Emperor, to a world whose dominant inspiration is that all should free tc rule themselves. Hegel calls this evolution of the state tyranny to freedom "the march of God in the world."? Similarly, defenders of liberty can justly say, in the language of Star Wars, that the Force with us. It is with us-a people united in the spirit of creative freedom and mutual love. For this is the nature of Spirit, according to Hegel. the Force that runs through us all together. It's truly understood only when we overcome the darkness that we ourselves cast by our separation one another, our egotism-only when we learn the ultimate and unconquerable

Anakin Skywalker as the Chosen One

power of love.

Anakin's mother, Shmi, tells Qui-Gon in The Phantom Menace that her gifted son was conceived without a father. "He is the chosen one," the child of prophecy, Qui-Gon later tells the Jedi Council. The same prophecy that foretells the growth of the Dark Side also tells of "the one who will

bring balance to the Force." All these echoes of Hegel's Consummate

Religion of Christianity, from prophecy to Virgin Birth to a mission of

liberation from darkness, set up certain natural expectations. And yet

Anakin is no clone of the Christian Savior as Jesus is conventionally

understood. Upsetting the standard Christian paradigm, the prophesied

savior of Star Wars becomes the archetype of modern villainy, the evil Lord

Darth Vader, a machine as much as a man, whose every breath sounds with

menace. And yet the prophecy is fulfilled. Anakin-Vader indeed brings

balance to the Force, striking down the Emperor, and then dying in the

loving embrace of his son.

Giving reason to this reversal of conventional Christianity, Hegel is sharply critical of a theology according to which Jesus is the

snarply critical of a theology according to which Jesus is the sinless

savior whose mission is to redeem a humanity sunk in darkness. He $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +$

light, the Gospel of John says, "and the light shines in darkness, and the

darkness does not comprehend it" (John 1:5). If he is the light, Hegel $\,$

effectively argues, he nevertheless himself enters into the darkness. The

Christian God enters the very darkness through the paradigmatic journey of

the Son of God to the cross on Mount Calvary, where Jesus experiences utter $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

abandonment, crying out, "My God, my God, why have you forsaken me?" (Mark 15:34).

The essence of sin, Hegel argues, is the belief that one is an

isolated individual, an ego separated from the All-all other human beings

and the rest of reality.10 In his sense of abandonment Jesus too

experienced such a condition of sinfulness. He plumbed the Dark Side of

reality to demonstrate "that the human, the finite, the fragile, the weak,

the negative are themselves moments of the divine, that they are within God

himself, that finitude, negativity, otherness are not outside of God and do not, as otherness, hinder unity with God."

If we seriously accept the Christian conception of Jesus as both God and man, then the Christian religion is truly the story of the hero's journey in which the Son of God descends from his exalted heights into the darkness of an oppressive epoch of earthly life, and so is able to connect the darkness to the light in a renewed balance. Only in this way does God realize himself as God.12 Just as we understand light only through its opposition to darkness, so God truly appreciates himself as God only by becoming something other than God-a finite human being subject to despair and death. God becomes human in every human being, for, as Hegel's contemporary William Wordsworth writes, "trailing clouds of glory do

The emerging human ego soon separates itself from this original divinity experienced in childhood-that is, identifies itself as a separate being in opposition to everything else-to the Infinite reality outside of itself. Thus begins the war of the separate human ego with the All, our infinite home becomes the Dark Side of God. Through the Son, which represents every solitary human being, the God within us enters into the darkness of separate, finite, ego-centered existence. The inexorable outcome of this journey finds tragic expression in the solitary despair of Jesus's cry from the cross.

come, From God who is our home."

But if there's full comprehension of the divine nature of the journey, of the unity of the light with the dark, such a death i the death of death itself, and the return of the Son to the Father in the unity of the Holy Spirit. Then, the empowered individual sees with the very eye of God. Hegel

cites with approval the thought of the medieval Christian mystic Meister

Eckhart (around 1260-1328): "The eye with which God sees me is the eye with

which I see him: my eye and his eye are the same." With such a vision, the

individual shares in the divine substance: "If God did not exist," Eckart

argues, "nor would I; if I did not exist, nor would he."

Hegel thereby shows how both things can be true, as $\operatorname{Obi-Wan}$ says: the

Force is both "an energy field created by all living things"-it's our own

energy, infinitely magnified for the one who knows how to connect

consciously with all living things — as well as the Force that $\$ "binds the

galaxy together." For Hegel, Jesus's crucifixion begins the destruction of

the old paradigm of separate human egos at war with one another. It's the

birth of a new kind of community, bound together in the spirit of love

Overcoming ego-separation and re-connecting through love with all living

things, the empowered individual actively participates in the Godforce,

the Spirit, that binds the galaxy together.

The Force of Love

Reality is ultimately "Spirit," Hegel argues. And Spirit is "T that is

'We,' and 'We' that is 'I.'"15 Our deeper nature is not to be an "T" $\,$

separate from other "I"s by the confines $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left$

bodies. Wherever there is one such separate "I" there are others, and each

of these egos struggles against the others. Where every "I" asserts itself

against every other "I," there's murder and mayhem-that perilous life of

mankind described by philosopher Thomas Hobbes as "solitary, poor, nasty, $\$

brutish and short."

If the human species is to survive, Hegel argues, some individuals

must surrender to others. Out of surrender of the weak to the strong, there

emerges the world of Masters and Slaves, until finally everyone is subservient to the one Emperor-the Dark Lord of the separate ego that is the deepest potential and ultimate aspiration within every separate ego.17 Here is the Dark Side of the Force, which for Hegel is the negative being of God. But the true nature of God, which Hegel calls Spirit, is not that of a separate power ruling over a universe of dominated creatures. This is an idea of an outmoded religion, as Han Solo recognizes. Such an all-controlling God is really the ultimate Dark Lord of unlimited egotistical power.

On a psychological plane, the "I" that is "We," or Spirit, discovered most vitally in the experience of love. The true meaning of sacred journey of the hero, exemplified in the life and death of the Christ figure, is infinite love.18 But, as Diotima teaches Socrates in Plato's Symposium, the path to infinite love begins with the love of one person.19 A crucial moment in Hegel's Phenomenology of Spirit is the love of intellectual and magician Faust for the young maid Gretchen, a love that made possible only through Faust's bargain with the devil-to give up soul in exchange for the intense experience of life that can only be found through love. This is indeed what the power of love seems to be for separate ego-the very loss of one's soul. Such love, which Faust obtains giving himself over to the powers of darkness, brings about death Gretchen as well as peril to the immortal soul of the lover. But for passionate love in which body and soul are totally at stake is the only to achieve a higher level of vitality and wholeness.

Hegel thereby helps us appreciate a central problem with the Stoic philosophy of the Jedi Knights. Their ideal of detachment from emotional

involvement with others seeks to forestall the descent into the darkness of

a Faustian love, but in doing so it leaves no room for the higher vitality

that only comes through deeply personal connections with particular

individuals. It's this unnatural Stoic detachment that leaves a lovelorn

Anakin no alternative, and so precipitates his Faustian bargain with the devil.

In a debate with the Jedi Council in The Phantom Menace, Qui-Gon defends Anakin's candidacy for Jedi knighthood despite his age. Anakin

has

spent the first nine years of his life living alone with his mother. Yoda

explains to Anakin why his attachment to his mother is dangerous for a ${\sf Jedi}$

warrior: "Afraid to lose her, I think."

"What's that got to do with anything?" Anakin protests. "Everything,"

Yoda tells him. "Fear is the path to the Dark Side. Fear leads to anger.

Anger leads to hate. Hate leads to suffering." Qui-Gon disagrees with the

negative assessment of Anakin. He tells the Jedi Council, "Finding him was

the will of the Force. I have no doubt of that." Indeed, for the devotee of

the Force, as Qui-Gon says to Shmi earlier in this episode, "Nothing

happens by accident." Only the mysterious $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +$

explain the series of events that led from the Naboo cruiser's leaking

hyperdrive, to an emergency stop on an obscure planet, to the discovery of

the slave boy Anakin with his remarkable abilities. As skeptical here as

Han Solo, the Jedi Council would rather put this all down to accident, for

accepting Anakin means confronting their own deepest fears. If it's

possible to be seduced by the Dark Side, it must also be possible to be

overly attached to the light-and overly fearful of the dark. The Jedi

are afraid-afraid of real human love, afraid of connection with the other

person, afraid of the loss of self-control that comes to the "I" of passionate love which is at the same time a "We."

Padme asks the grown-up Anakin in Attack of the Clones: "Are you allowed to love? I thought that was forbidden for a Jedi." Anakin "Attachment is forbidden. Possession is forbidden. Compassion, which would define as unconditional love, is central to a Jedi's life. So might say we are encouraged to love." But such compassion without attachment, without possession and being-possessed, is superficial, abstracted, intellectualized form of love. Attachment and possession are forbidden because such connections to particular things and people lead fear for them and fear of losing them. And fear leads to the Dark Side. Therefore, the love of the Jedi Knight must be a detached love-if it indeed be called love with its willingness to sacrifice friends and ones for the perceived higher good. Anakin rejects this detached love the Stoic sage, as does Luke in The Empire Strikes Back when he spurns Yoda's declaration that his training is more important than the life of and Leia. Giving an ironic twist to the deeper unity of the light with dark, the Emperor echoes Yoda's counsel in Return of the Jedi,

Dark Lord tells Luke that his faith in his friends is his great weakness.

The Jedi fears what the Sith Lord despises, the power over the ego $\ensuremath{\mathsf{wielded}}$

by human love.

Anakin's eventual declaration of love in Attack of the Clones, in the most sexually seductive scene in the whole of Star Wars, is worthy or Shakespeare: "I am haunted by the kiss you should never have given me. My heart is beating, hoping that kiss wil not become a scar. You are in my very soul, tormenting me What can I do? I will do anything you ask." Such

passionate personal love indeed leads Anakin to the \mbox{Dark} Side. He kill:

indiscriminately out of rage against his mother's murder. Fron the

beginning of their relationship, Anakin and Padme sens<that their dark,

secret love will ruin them.

With such an understanding of the background story, we finally come to

appreciate why Luke recognizes the good in hi: father. It's because Anakin

doesn't fear to go where love take: him, both when his love of Padme takes

him into the darknes: and when his love of Luke brings him back $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

under stand that his destiny, subtly and beautifully orchestrated by

th<will of the Force and the magic of George Lucas's art, has al along been

to love. By loving in a way that's truly unconditional without fear of the

darkness into which his love leads him, h < fulfills his destiny, destroys

the Emperor, and so brings balana to the Force.

Part IV

"There's Always a Bigger Fish" Truth, Faith, and a Galactic Society

"What Is Thy Bidding, My Master?": Star Wars and the Hegelian Struggle for Recognition

BRIAN K. CAMERON

Star Wars, as the name suggests, is about struggle and conflict, hope

and renewal, war and death. On the one side, there are the Rebels, whose

struggle for freedom from Imperial domination and fear motivate their

supporters and give life to the movement. On the other side, there $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

Emperor and his minions who, driven by what philosopher Friedrich Nietzsche

planets and their populations in a ruthless attempt to achieve their goals.

Art really does imitate life or, at the very least, it illuminates an

important feature of it-namely, the exercise of a certain kind of power.

It isn't difficult to explain how this kind of power arises; fear is the mechanism that accounts for its existence and strength. It is fear of

losing his sister that moves Luke to do the Emperor's bidding and strike

down his father. It is fear that motivates the Senate to form the clone

army that ultimately brings about its own demise. And, it's the fear of

losing his mother that sends the young Anakin Skywalker down the path to

the Dark Side and prompts the ancient Jedi Master, Yoda, to voice the

mantra of his religion: "Fear leads to anger... anger leads to hate... hate

leads to suffering."

Fear illuminates the path to slavery and suffering, the path that $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right)$

leads to the Dark Side. At the same time, though, it reveals a certain mode

of exercising power-the way of the Sith Master. The Master rises to his

station and maintains his dominance over his apprentices or slaves by

evoking and playing upon their fears. And the apprentice or slave maintains $\ensuremath{\mathsf{S}}$

himself as a slave by allowing those fears to determine his being. This

interplay between power and fear is what the nineteenth-century German

philosopher Georg Hegel (1770-1831) called the "master-slave dialectic." By

looking at the Star Wars saga through the lens of Hegel's master-slave

dialectic we will not only better understand the nature and limits $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

Emperor's power, but also why - apart from the Hollywood impulse to give

audiences a happy ending-that power failed. And, as an added bonus, Hegel's

analysis forces us to look most carefully at the personal exercise of

power, bringing into sharper relief the various characters within the Star

Wars galaxy and their motivations.

Masters and Slaves: Who Rules Whom?

identity

at the end of Return of the Jedi.

Thales, the very first philosopher in the Western tradition, was once asked, "What is most difficult?" He replied, "To know thyself." Indeed,
Thales was not far off the mark: coming to understand ourselves and the value and meaning of our experiences really is one of the most difficult things any of us can do. Similarly, coming to understand how self-knowledge is itself possible, how it arises, and in what it consists is one of the more challenging problems philosophers grapple with. In Star Wars, two of the most compelling themes are Luke's journey of self-discovery and his father's redemption as the result of his own coming to a new self-

As unlikely as it may sound, it's the problem of self-knowledge ultimately leads Hegel to examine the relationship between master and slave. For Hegel, knowledge about ourselves as individuals, knowledge the value and meaning of our projects and experiences, necessarily implies a relationship to other people. Our individual self-understanding does arise independently of others; rather, it emerges in the context of relationship with other people. Their recognition (or lack of recognition) of us as having valuable, independent projects and experiences shapes how we perceive ourselves. Not surprisingly then, the type and quality of relationships to others will have a direct influence on our capacity know and value ourselves. Some relationships can enhance our capacity self-knowledge while others, like the relation between a master and a slave (or between the Emperor and his subjects), distort the picture we have ourselves. But, what's really interesting about this is, the fact that it

is the master, and not so much the slave, whose self-understanding is distorted by the relationship. Let's see why.

From the standpoint of self-knowledge, the individual becomes aware of herself as an individual (she becomes self-conscious) at the moment she confronts another like herself, a subject capable of interpreting understanding the world.1 In this meeting, the two are aware of each other, but that awareness carries with it a certain tension. Insofar as the other is a co-interpreter of the world, she is a subject for whom the world presents itself. On the other hand, insofar as the world remains an to her, the other is likewise an object within that world.2 When, instance, Luke and Vader first meet in The Empire Strikes Back, Vader torn. On the one hand, he regards Luke as a trophy, a mere object conquest. On the other hand, he also sees Luke as a potential rival to Emperor, an equal and partner.

In any case, at this point the individual is only aware of herself in terms of her capacity to interpret and understand the world. What she lacks is an understanding of herself as an active creator, that is, as a being with meaningful projects and goals. Yet in order to know herself in this way, the individual must somehow fashion a world according to her own will; she must, in other words, make for herself a human world. Then and only then will her individuality emerge and itself become something to be interpreted and understood by another. The problem is that being creative in this sense requires that we impress our will on others by ordering our world. In this respect, we are all like the Emperor, attempting to remake the world in our own image.

The struggle begins! Each refuses to see the other as a coequal subject, and each sees in the other the means to create a world of their own design. Both risk all in the life-or-death struggle for supremacy, for it is by such a struggle that, Hegel thinks, we come to know and value life with all its creative possibilities.3 In the end, one reaches the brink of terror and backs down, only to become the slave of the other. This, in simple terms, is how Hegel understands the historical emergence of the relation between masters and slaves.

It's tempting to think that at this point the master has what he wants. As master, he can command the labor of the slave and make the world into what he wills. Freed from the drudgery of mundane work, the master can live in lavish surroundings, indulge in fabulous pleasures, and do pretty much as he pleases (think Jabba the Hutt). It certainly looks as if the master has what he wants, just as it looks as if the Emperor, with his crimson-clad guards and fawning courtiers, has what he wants; but appearances can be deceiving.

It was to be recognized by another, an equal, that the master risked everything to become master, not to live a life of pleasure. The slave is human being, but as long as he remains a slave he cannot give the master the recognition he desires-the recognition of an equal. Why does this matter? Hegel expresses it this way: "Self-consciousness exists in and itself when, and by the fact that, it so exists for another; that exists only in being acknowledged."4 Although I am surely something independently of others, the understanding I have of myself, of the value of my projects, of the meaning and sense of my experiences, is dependent upon the way others see me. Naturally, must trust in and value the

judgments of those who evaluate me. If I judge them to be unequal,

incapable of understanding or passing judgment upon the value of $\mbox{\em my}$ life,

then their opinions are worthless to me. Only an equal is capable of

understanding me in the way I understand myself. Thus, if I am to gain the $\,$

recognition I desire as a self-conscious being, if I am to $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

truth about myself and my possibilities as a human being, then I must $\ensuremath{\mathsf{seek}}$

out an equal.

But this is impossible for the master. By definition, the master $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1$

"prefers death to the slavish recognition of another's superiority."5 And

it is only through death, his death or that of his adversary, that the

master achieves what he wills-lordship. The possibility of peaceful co-

existence with co-equals-with other $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

original struggle for (a onesided) recognition is merely transplanted to a

new site. For as long as the master refuses to recognize the other as a co-

equal subject, for as long as he wills that he be master, his most

important human aims are, and will forever be, frustrated.

Of course it goes without saying that the slave's aims are likewise

frustrated. Being a slave is only a happy state of affairs in bad

histories. In reality slavery is a brutal and inhuman institution, and the

brief glimpse of slavery on Tatooine that we get in The Phantom Menace is

tame and whitewashed. Nevertheless, the situation for the slave is also not

what it might at first seem.

To begin with, it is the slave whose labor creates the world of

things, and through that labor he comes to experience himself as a creative

being. This is certainly the case for young Anakin working in Watto's shop.

While the master cannot in the end be satisfied with himself-for he can

choose only to live a life of animal pleasure or fight anew and die in the

field of battle-the slave can go beyond himself and his situation by

overcoming his fears. In The Empire Strikes Back, Luke's experience in the

cave and his subsequent Jedi training symbolizes his own struggle with, and

overcoming of, fear. His fear at first enslaves him and prevents $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left$

acting as a Jedi Knight. Although Luke claims that he is not afraid, Yoda

knows better and warns, "You will be... you will be." His overcoming of

that fear in turn constitutes an important part of his maturation and in

their duel on Cloud City, Vader praises Luke for overcoming his fear.

Consequently, it is the master who represents an historical $\mbox{\ dead\ }$ end. He

can never go beyond what he is and realize himself as a free self-conscious

subject. The slave, on the other hand, has nothing to lose but his fear; he

can and will go beyond what he is because his desire is not to be master,

but to be free. Hegel says that he finds this freedom in his work, a space

in which he controls his small, limited world and recognizes the freedom of

having a "mind of one's own."

An Empire of Fear and Trembling

The management of fear is the business of the Empire, and fear is the $\ensuremath{\mathsf{E}}$

coinage of power that must make itself visibly terrible in order to rule.?

The Emperor, precisely because he is unequal in relation to his subjects,

cannot exert his power at all times. Within such a system it's

exceptional, the example or spec-tacle, which must circulate and

demonstrate power. The deci-sion to destroy the planet Alderaan, for

instance, was made not because it constituted a threat, but because its

visibility made it a useful show of force. "Dantooine," Grand Moff Tarkin

announces, "is too remote to make an effective demonstration." True, the

exercise of power is excessive, but it isn't indiscriminate-its use is calculated to maximize fear and render unnecessary the actual deployment of force elsewhere: "Fear will keep the local systems in line, fear of this battle station."

Like all weapons of mass destruction, the Death Star's military function cannot be easily separated from its political and policing functions-its purpose as a method of domestic control. Its objective power lies not in its actual use, but in the threat of its use, and herein the secret of its political function of justifying the exercise of power. "This station," says one overly zealous commander, "is now the ultimate power in the universe, I suggest we use it." The suggestion can be ignored, but not the implication. By its very existence, the Death Star invites and seemingly justifies the extension of Imperial power to every corner the galaxy. The power to destroy a planet is the power to render obedient entire populations. When wielded by the master, it shows who his enemies are, and in doing so it explains and justifies the master's power by revealing its strength.

The Death Star is the most spectacular display of a power that is not afraid of being seen as terrible; but it isn't the only display of that power, nor the only way by which that power makes itself felt. The Emperor's control over individuals, unlike that exercised over entire populations, must be managed with a degree of flexibility that corresponds with the interest he has in extracting ever more useful labor from them. In order to make those individuals useful and cooperative, the Emperor may replace the specific dread of a well-defined threat like the Death Star with the more constant terror of the unknown. "The Emperor is coming here?"

a surprised commander asks at the beginning of Return of the jedi. "Yes,"

Vader replies, "and he is most displeased with your apparent lack of

progress." The threat is undefined and left to play upon the commander's

imagination. Almost without hesitation he responds: "We shall double our

efforts!" And then a second ill-defined threat is voiced and left to hang

in the air: "I hope so, commander, for your sake. The Emperor is not as

forgiving as I am." Vader's "forgiveness" is legendary, after all.

In still other cases, the threat is defined but its meaning left $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right)$

unclear. In his confrontation with the Emperor, Luke's fear of seeing

Rebellion fail, of becoming like his father, and of seeing his sister

turned to the Dark Side all become real. But what would it mean to become

like his father? Does the end of the Rebellion mean the end of all

rebellion; what exactly does it signal? If the Rebel fleet is destroyed,

are his friends necessarily killed? Can the Emperor find Leia and if so,

what would it mean to turn her to the Dark Side? In no case is $T_{\rm BR}$

confronted with a specific and implacable sign of what's to come. Rather, a

web of fear is spread by the Emperor's taunting in order to elicit Luke's

anger and call forth that all-too-human power to override reason $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left$

in to hate.

If the mechanism of fear explains how it is the Emperor rules his

Empire and primarily relates to his subjects, it is hatred that explains

his relation to his closest advisors and minions-Darth Maul, Count Dooku,

and most especially, Darth Vader. Neither equality nor recognition, but

instead hatred ties each to the other, because hatred is the primary way by

which each makes sense of themselves and the world. Each is driven by his

own hatred of life, of all things good, and (it is likely) of himself. Not

surprisingly, then, each sees in the other a reflection of himself:

something to resent and hate perhaps, but also something intelligible and

understandable, a kind of common ground.

Earlier we saw that the master seeks after equals $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +$

relate as a self-conscious being. If Hegel is right and the master can

never be satisfied with himself and his life, then it's not surprising that

the Emperor should come to hate life and himself. In other words, it's

reasonable to think that hatred will become the primary way by which the

master understands his experience of the world and himself. Consequently,

that same hatred will constitute the sole means by which the master relates

lo others as self-conscious beings, that is, as relative equals.

Naturally those relations will be seriously impoverished and

deficient, as indeed they are. Even so, because those relations are formed

around the principle focus by which each understands himself (in this

hatred), those relationships will be more personal, stronger, and more

enduring than any other relation each might have. More than anything else,

this explains the Emperor's power over his minions and their respective

allegiances to him. As Vader confides in Luke, "I must obey my master."

We might see this most clearly if we think carefully about the

evolution of Darth Vader and his eventual betrayal of the Emperor.

starts off, in A New Hope, as a dark embodiment of everything evil. In his

first cinematic act, he crushes a man's neck while questioning him about

the whereabouts of some stolen plans. From there, things only get worse:

with the hindsight of the later films, we know he allows the death of his

step-family, Owen and Beru Lars; interrogates and tortures his own

daughter; kills his old friend and mentor, Obi-Wan; and nearly kills his

son in the Death Star trench. In The Empire Strikes Back, Vader does no

better-in a number of instances he simply kills those subordinates who fail

him in a kind of idealized form of corporate downsizing. And so by the time

we reach the last installment of the saga, Return of the Jedi, and are

aware of Luke's parentage, we're given almost no reason to think that Luke

is anything more than deluded in believing there is "still good in him." On

the contrary, the so-called struggle Luke senses in his father is buried so

deeply that, up until the point where Luke lays prostrate before a

murderous Emperor, we're given no indication that Vader is anything more

than a willing servant of evil. Then, and only then, does Vader act to save his son.

So why does he do it? Or, better yet-how does Vader surmount the Emperor's hold over him?

There's really only one possible answer: Vader overcomes $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right)$ the Emperor

by overcoming his hate and achieving a new self-consciousness. Confronted

with his son's unshakeable belief in his goodness, Vader comes to realize

the truth about himself - he isn't a pawn of evil, but a man of inherent

goodness and nobility. 8 Vader turns on the Emperor when he becomes aware of

himself as something other than a hate-filled man, something other than a $\!\!\!\!$

slave. And, that awareness comes at precisely the moment when Vader comes

face-to-face with the possibility of watching die the only person $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +$

goodness in him, his son Luke.

Luke and Vader's personal struggle with their own fears is at the heart of the larger story about struggle and conflict between the Rebels and the Empire. The resolution of that personal struggle represents

moment of self-discovery for both characters, a moment when each $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left$

understand, in virtue of their relation to one another, who they really

were. And the same can be said for the larger struggles that are taking

place within the saga. The Ewoks, for instance, prove who and what they are

in their confrontation with the Empire. Similarly, the Naboo and the \mbox{Trade}

Federations reveal something of themselves in their responses to the

collapse of the Republic and the rise of the Sith. This, it seems, is what

Hegel was trying to tell us-in the relation between masters and slaves, it

is the slave, and not the master, who is in a position to reveal something

about our possibilities as human beings. Fear may create and sustain

relations of inequality, but the desire to know who and what we are will,

in the end, likely triumph.

By Any Means Necessary: Tyranny Democracy Republic, and Empire KEVIN S. DECKER

Palpatine-the weasel-like Senator from Naboo, the rapidly wrinkling $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1$

Supreme Chancellor, and ultimately the cackling, loathsome Emperoris

reviled universally by fans as the epitome of evil. Still, you've got to

give him credit for his political savvy. After all, Palpatine's career is a

textbook case in how the unceasing desire for power can change something

like democracy, or rule by the many, into a tyrannical dictatorship. Using

the constant threat posed by the Dark Side of the Force, the Sith-Palpatine

and his protege, Darth Vader-use the hyper-technological Imperial military $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

to keep iron-fisted, monochromatic control over the galaxy. How different

this vision is from the diverse and colorful, if conflicted, $\,$ Old Republic $\,$

of the prequel trilogy!

This same kind of political one-hundred-eighty degree turn has

occurred in human history, too. Politicians, political scientists and

theorists over many centuries have grappled with how this could have

happened, in most cases in order to prevent it from happening again. But

the story of the road to tyranny isn't just of historical interest, even

though democracy and tyranny date back to ancient Greece. It also embroils

us in heady debates of today about the source of political authority,

whether the needed expertise of politicians is a good trade-off against the

possibility of their corruption, and how much power can safely be

concentrated in the hands of a few.

These arguments often boil down to the question of who rules versus who should rule. This isn't an easy question, because it presumes that we've settled on what kind of govern-ment is best-democracy, republic, aristocracy, or some other? Also, it presumes that we know whether rulers need some virtue or expertise in order to rule, or could everyone simply rule themselves? Political life in the Star Wars galaxy provides us

jumping off point in approaching these central questions of political philosophy.

Galactic Politics for Dummies

Despite their lukewarm reception by the fans, Episodes I-III in the Star Wars saga tell us the most about the political forces that fundamentally drive its episodic stories and overall narrative. With the blockbuster episodes made in the late 1970s and 1980s, there wasn't much

say. The Cold War-style political message of Star Wars at that time was

fairly simple: big, evil empires that rely on soulless technology and

dominating control over their populations are bad, and rebellion against

such empires is justified. By contrast, Episodes I-III deliver a more

complex message about the human failings and weaknesses that help to undermine a huge, declining federation of civilizations.

To answer the question of how a democratic form of government could slide into empire, we have to define a few terms and make a few quesses about the nature of the Republic. In our galaxy, the word "republic" originates from the Latin respublica, the realm of public life outside private affairs. The term's meaning is roughly equivalent to what we would call the "commonwealth" or "common good." Palpatine's government may be republic in this simple sense alone: it recognizes and works for the common good. In Attack of the Clones, Anakin voices an idea of what a republic ought to do. "We need a system where the politicians sit down and discuss the problem, agree to what's in the best interest of all people, and then do it," he says to Padme.

But some might argue that "republicanism" means more than just recognition of the common good. Government should be built on the idea the freedom of its citizens is essential, they say, but their freedom depends on their taking part in government. Their participation includes protecting themselves from the arbitrary influence of others.1 Such protection can be secured in lots of different ways, perhaps most importantly through justifiable restrictions on the power both government and certain collective interests like corporations and specialinterest groups. However the republican tradition in political thought also stresses that citizens must be active participants in political life according to moral or civic duty. Rather than simply defining what republics have been historically, this way of thinking moral importance-it makes a statement about how political life contributes to the

good life, and what we ought to do to achieve it.

"The problem," writes Jean-Jacques Rousseau in the eighteenth century,
"is to find a form of association which will defend and protect with the whole common force the person and goods of each associate, and in which each, while uniting himself with all, may still obey himself alone, and remain as free as before."2 Rousseau poses the thorny question of how to balance the group needs that we all share and that can't be served without

collective action with the dignity and autonomy (or self-rule) of the individual.

The Republic also seems to have certain features of a democracy.

Democracies need two ideals as essential ingredients of their laws and

institutions: self-government and equality. Since every inhabitant of

Naboo, Coruscant, Dantooine, Kashyyk and all the others can't be expected

to vote on every issue before the Senate, they interpret "self-government"

the same way we do in America-in terms of a representative democracy. This

is the preferred option for any large, heavily populated democracy for

obvious reasons. There have been direct democracies, though, in which

individual citizens do vote on everything. We can't conclude that simply

because the Republic seems to be a democracy, every planetary system within

it is also ruled by the people. Naboo, for example, democratically elects

its queen, but it's implied in The Phantom Menace that the Gungans haven't

had a say in the larger political affairs of the planet for some time.

So, is the Republic founded on the ideal of equality as well? By this we can't suggest that in a democracy everyone is born equal in terms of their talents, capacities, social or economic status. Obviously the set of

our natural endowments is virtually unique to each individual. Instead, equality in a democracy usually means equal rights, equal opportunity, equal standing under the law. Civil rights laws, welfare systems, public education, and trial by a jury of one's peers have all been used to promote this kind of equality. But in the Star Wars galaxy, it's clear that kind of equality isn't treated as a universal standard. Certain societies, such as the Jedi Order, seem to function based on hierarchical, democratic principles. There are planets like Tatooine where slavery is only legal, but also the basis of the economy; but as Shmi Skywalker points out, Tatooine isn't part of the Republic. And there's controversial issue of whether droids are persons, have rights, and deserve to be treated equally with "organics."3 These are all reminders that in reality democracy has both an ideal meaning and a real landscape, as the examples of the civil rights and women's voting movements of twentieth century show. In both cases, only moral arguments and public protests enlarged our conception of what equality meant, even as numbers of citizens held that opportunities ought to be restricted to

Let's assume that the Republic is a democratic republic in more than name only. How do we get from that to the tyranny of the Empire? Aristotle provides us with a suitable definition for tyranny: it's the "arbitrary power of an individual which is responsible to no one, and governs all alike, whether equals or betters, with a view to its own advantage, not to that of its subjects, and therefore against their will."4 So the idea of a ruler who acts in blatant defiance of the laws, or perhaps in the absence of laws, is central to the definition of tyranny. Ancient Greek tyrants and

white men.

Roman dictators were often voted into power by means of the laws they later

defied, in order to respond to an external challenge to their state, like

imminent invasion, or in some cases because of internal threats, such as civil war.

In his own route to tyranny, Palpatine and his alter ego, Darth

Sidious, have taken a path like the one expressed in the lyrics of an old

German song: "against democrats, only soldiers help." The Sith Lord's

alliance with the Trade Federation and his commissioning of the Kaminoan

clone army through the Jedi Sifo-Dyas both paved the way for the Clone $\ensuremath{\mathtt{Wars}}$

ten years later. Lust for power, not high ideals, is Palpatine's primary

motivation. Palpatine wants to transform the Republic to obtain power, and

he realizes that the only way to establish power over such a large, diverse

group of peoples is through the use of military might. One snag: the mainly

pacifist Senate won't allow such an army to be mustered, even when they

find out that they have the Kamino clones at their disposal. Palpatine

can't let this stand in his way, but fortunately his long-term scheming has

paved the way for a solution. In Revenge of the Sith, we finally see his

plan revealed in its awful magnitude, and its keystone is the power of the $\ensuremath{\mathsf{T}}$

clone army to destroy most of the Jedi, allow $\mbox{Palpatine}$ to $\mbox{dissolve}$ the

Senate, and suppress any opposition to his declaring himself $\,$ Emperor. Why

did the Senate vote in favor of giving Palpatine dictatorial authority,

thus allowing him to harness the power he would eventually use to $\ensuremath{\mathtt{crush}}$

them? The answer is a familiar and simple one: fear.

Fear as an Ally

"Fear is my ally," hisses Darth Maul in the exciting ad campaign that led up to the much-anticipated release of The Phantom Menace. Maul's

sentiment is echoed by Grand Moff Tarkin, who in A New Hope says that the

finished Death Star will have a deterrent effect against rebellion, since

"fear will keep the local systems in line." Both agree about the political

value of fear with Palpatine, who is positively Machiavellian in his

scheming toward the Empire, in the way he later controls his domain, and

even while he taunts Luke to use his fear and anger as a means to bring him

over to the Dark Side. In this, he is the paradigm of "the Prince," the

unscrupulous ruler envisioned by Niccol6 Machiavelli (1469-1527), a

Renaissance political thinker who advised Italy's Borgia and Medici

families. Machiavelli famously declared that if a prince has the choice

between being loved and being feared by his subjects, he ought to choose

fear. Ever the realist, Machiavelli held that this is because "love is held

by a chain of obligation which, men being selfish, is broken whenever it

serves their purpose; but fear is maintained by a dread of punishment which

never fails."

Machiavelli amends this statement, though, by saying that a good ruler $\ensuremath{\mathsf{T}}$

ought to avoid those things that inspire hatred rather than fear, such as

taking the property or wife of a subject. Today, we can hear echoes of

Machiavelli's dictum when our leaders convince us to elect them or support $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1$

their initiatives, not by offering us good reasons, but by playing on our

emotions and sympathies. This tactic is held by many to be anti-democratic

as it both disrespects and clouds our ability to make informed, rational

decisions. Real democracy is based on our ability to make good decisions,

since democratic political authority issues from the will of the people.

We're rightly suspicious of such Machiavellian tendencies in our

leaders as a result.

Machiavelli's suggestion that clever politicians balance the happiness

of citizens with uncertainty about their security has a very old pedigree.

A prime example is found in ancient Athens, some fifty years before the

advent of direct democracy there in 508 b.c.e. At the time, the Athenians

were divided into three regional factions. The leaders of all three vied

for political power, not to institute equality between citizens, but so

that the classes they represented would gain by certain changes. Into this

powder keg stepped the legendary Greek legislator Solon, held by later

Greeks as "the greatest of statesman and the wisest of men" who had already

saved Athens from civil war in 594 b.c.e.

Attempting to broker a settlement, Solon was suspicious of the

attitude of Pisistratus, the leader of the disaffected working class, who

"had an affable and engaging manner, was a great friend of the poor, and

behaved with generosity even to his enemies."6 This fooled many Athenians,

but not Solon. Pisistratus cemented his place in the people's hearts by

wounding himself, then driving a chariot into the Athenian marketplace to

denounce an assassination attempt by his enemies to his followers. Like the

anonymous, red-robed guards that constantly accompany Palpatine, bodyguards $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left($

were granted to Pisistratus, who used them to seize the Acropolis and

establish himself as a tyrant, a single ruler who consults the laws only

when it suits him. His position, effectively similar to the old Greek kings

of the Iliad and Odyssey, passed to his two sons before the tyranny was

ended. Solon, although allowed to live under the tyranny, was powerless to

challenge the power of the Pisistratids.

In the later Roman political tradition, special powers and single-person rule made up the role of the dictator, which did not have the same

negative meaning then as it does now. Dictators were often figures with

military power-Julius Caesar for example-and were appointed indirectly by

the Roman senate for specific purposes like commanding an army, holding

elections, or suppressing sedition. Dictators were to $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1$

and powers as soon as their task was completed and the emergency was over.

But Caesar, whose appointment to the unheard-of position of dictator

perpetuus perhaps gave us the first hint of the modern meaning of the word, $\$

used his powers to effectively destroy the Roman Republic and $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1$

hereditary Empire. Palpatine would have been proud.

Was George Lucas unconsciously thinking of his ancient history class

in high school when he penned Palpatine's speech accepting radical

"emergency powers" in order to combat the political Separatists lead by

Count Dooku in Attack of the Clones'? There, the future Emperor declares gravely:

It is with great reluctance that I have agreed to this calling. I love $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

democracy. I love the Republic. The power you give me I will lay down when

this crisis has abated. And as my first act with this new authority, I will

create a Grand Army of the Republic to counter the $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

the Separatists.

The "reluctant" acceptance of the power he has been secretly hoping

for, his noble words in defense of popular rule, and his solemn promise to

lay down power when it's no longer needed would not have sounded

inappropriate coming from Pisistratus or Julius Caesar. So the irony in

this important scene, both in this sense and given what happens in Revenge

of the Sith, is palpable (excuse the pun). It's an essential part of the

tragedy of the prequel trilogy, however, that fear exposes the clay feet of

the Republic's stone giant.

Palpatine's gambit puts a new spin on Machiavelli. Palpatine realizes that an adversarial relationship between himself and the rest of the Republic won't go his way: sometimes it's better to be loved than feared. But fear can still be his ally as long as he's poised, shoulder-to-shoulder with senators and citizens, against some external force. Long before the events of The Phantom Menace, Palpatine must have struggled with the same question as Pisistratus did: "How can a threat be manufactured that will unite the people behind me, and lead to their granting me special powers and a military force?" Palpatine's scheming is all the more insidious because, through the Neimoidian Trade Federation, Count Dooku, and

allies, he manufactures the threat. But modern democracies in our world have faced real threats to their existence, both external (like war and

terrorism) and internal (like crime and political corruption).

After Obi-Wan reports in from Geonosis about the genuine threat represented by the Separatists, a senator from Malastare loyal to Palpatine claims, "The time for debate [about the Military Creation Act] is over. we need that clone army." Since the Senate won't use the clones preemptively, the "hawks" among them decide that the threat justifies granting Palpatine emergency powers, an act that is the beginning of the end democracy in the Republic. Like these fictional senators, we need to ourselves the difficult questions, "What measures can be justly taken defend a democracy in troubled times?" and "Is democracy undermined undemocratic measures are taken in its defense?" These are questions relevant and controversial today as they were a long time ago in a galaxy far, far away.

Power in the Hands of the Virtuous Few

There's an important scene in Attack of the Clones that contrasts two major answers to these questions we just posed about the defense of democracy:

Anakin: I don't think the system works. We need a system where the politicians sit down and discuss the problem, agree to what's in the best interest of all the people, and then do it.

Padme: That's exactly what we do. The problem is that people don't always agree.

Anakin: Then they should be made to.

Padme: By whom? Who's going to make them?

Anakin: Someone...

Padme: You?

Anakin: No, not me.

Padme: But someone...?

Anakin: (nods) Someone wise.

Padme: I don't know. Sounds an awful lot like a dictatorship to me.

Anakin: (after a long pause) Well, if it works...?

Anakin's thoughts reflect Palpatine's distrust of the politics of the Republic, which were expressed more subtly in The Phantom Menace over the Senate's handling of the Naboo trade embargo. By this point, Anakin seems

clearly under Palpatine's charismatic influence, if not of the Dark Side

itself. Anakin voices the view of his mentor that the bureaucratic aspects

of a democratic republic hinder it when swift action is needed. Because of

this, the Republic may be unable to handle internal or external challenges

unless it leans on the leadership of its best, wisest, and most virtuous

citizens. Padme seems to recoil at his "great man" solution to political

dissent, perhaps by maintaining that democracy has the resources necessary

to survive. Their debate is reflected in the confrontation between the very

different ideas of two recent political philosophers, Leo Strauss (1899-

1973) and John Dewey (1859-1952). Both of them were concerned with the

problems and prospects of a kind of democracy we haven't really looked at

yet: modern liberal democracy. But Strauss and Dewey understood the term

"liberal" in very different ways.

Strauss thinks that political thinkers of the past, particularly Plato

and Aristotle, provide timeless questions about the good life and the just

state that today's political philosophers should still be concerned about.

But, he would say, modern politics has somehow gotten off the right track,

taking its cues from mediocre mass culture, mob democracy, and moral

relativism (the belief that no moral view is inherently superior to any

other). It's true that these seem to be characteristics of modern culture,

but Strauss calls our attention to the ideals that animate the

"philosopher-king" of Plato's Republic and the contemplative sage of

Aristotle's Nicomachean Ethics. Both figures are beacons of virtue and

wisdom as well as natural leaders. Their search for absolute and ultimate

truth in political life, as in all other areas, has been abandoned for the

most part, he thinks. So his sense of "liberal" attempts to recapture what

was at the heart of Platonic and Aristotelian political thought: it expresses our inner impulse toward human excellence as being the end of all our efforts. Strauss says:

The liberal man on the highest level esteems most highly the mind and its excellence and is aware of the fact that man at his best is autonomous or not subject to any authority, while in every other respect he is subject to authority which, in order to deserve respect, or to be truly authority, must be a reflection through a dimming medium of what is simply the highest.

Strauss's way of thinking treats democracy as a "universal aristocracy" in which all are free to find their proper purpose and place in society, but society itself is structured by the insight that our wisest leaders have into what is essential, most real, or "the highest" in human nature.

John Dewey, called in his time "America's philosopher," would agree with Strauss's key idea that an ideal democracy is a universal aristocracy. But much depends on whether we put the stress on "universal" "aristocracy," Dewey argues. For him, the "liberal" in liberal democracy means faith "that every human being as an individual may be the best some particular purpose and hence be the most fitted to rule, to lead, that specific respect."8 He also stresses that we should see democracy merely a way in which those with the greatest political expertise find their way into power. Democracy is more than a kind of political system involving voting and majority rule. It's a way of living that extends farther than politics, one that demands that individuals have the greatest freedom-in terms of equality of opportunity-to continue to grow as

individuals and express their individuality. Democracy in this sense is a

struggle: it requires our commitment to continually criticize and revise

educational, political, and other means for providing opportunities for

individuals. Sometimes these commitments may get in the way of traditional

beliefs and values, and cause conflicts. But, Dewey says, it is also the

best path for the attainment of excellence by a democratic citizenry $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right$

whole. But Dewey's view of excellence is not like Strauss's because it is

not solely dependent upon our accepting the wisdom of great and virtuous

leaders. Instead, he says that democracy involves "faith in the capacity of

the intelligence of the common man to respond with commonsense to the free

play of facts and ideas which are secured by effective guarantees of free

inquiry, free assembly and free communication."

men" and by his distrust of popular participation in democracy, holds a

view comparable to Strauss's. For both of them, greater concentration of

power in the hands of a few is justified by the natural ability of those

few to lead and their virtues in assessing, judging, and responding to

difficult and complex situations. To Strauss, these are "the wise," and

Anakin sees wisdom and virtue not so much in Obi-Wan or the $\,$ Jedi Council,

but in figures like Palpatine who promise both the power and the license to

correct injustices quickly and immediately. But the common person is

apparently not fit to rule herself according to Strauss or Anakin, and the

Straussian statesman is empowered to utilize many means, including

deception, the stirring of patriotism, and manufactured threats in order to

keep power.

Padme may represent a view closer to Dewey's. Although she agrees with

Anakin in part when she claims in frustration in The Phantom Menace that

the Republic is broken, she seems to have changed her mind in Attack of the

Clones when she agrees with Queen Jamilla of Naboo's assertion that "the

day we stop believing democracy can work is the day we lose it." By

opposing the Senate's Military Creation Act from the beginning, Padme may

have seized on a version of Dewey's central idea that democratic ends can

be reached only by democratic means. Measures that threaten or clearly

violate the republican and democratic principles we looked at $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1$

create the fagade of democracy, but they line the foundation of the

democratic house with coercion, deception, and the establishment of

aristocracies of all kinds-of wealth, of influence, or even those of higher

education and virtue as Strauss suggests. Democracies can and should still

value virtue and ability, but they should also put their trust in healthy

checks and balances on the abuse of power, all at the $\mbox{reasonable}$ cost of

lessening the efficiency of democratic leadership. Of course, it's this

loss of efficiency that future strong leaders like Anakin Skywalker

deplore. When Palpatine seizes ultimate power, Anakin wins, but at the cost

of his own soul. For the rest of the denizens of the Republic, the

importance of balancing security and democratic principles is a lesson

learned the hard way.

Palpatine's Legacy

Palpatine's rise from democratically-elected Supreme Chancellor to

Emperor is a gripping, if ultimately tragic tale of how democracy may be

destroyed from within by its own weakness when security is pursued by non-

democratic means. It also exposes a flaw in the Straussian thinking of even

well-meaning people like Anakin: "Who watches the watchers?" Strauss's

virtuous statesmen don't ultimately answer to the common person but to a higher truth to which only the statesmen are privileged to. What checks are put on their obtaining power and who is to say that they are virtuous in their efforts? - only other members of "the wise."

The bitter truth raised here may stem from the fact that we have become more cynically distrustful of centralized authority, but there also a deeper point to be made. Virtue is good, we agree, but our vision human excellence today is much more diverse and plural than it was Strauss's beloved Greeks. There are many goods worth pursuing, and perhaps some conflict with one another: the democratic challenge for now explore how to balance or reconcile these conflicts in order to maximize virtue, not concentrate it in figures of authority. As Senator, Supreme Chancellor, and ultimately Emperor, Palpatine's example throws light on path from democracy to empire, a path paved with fear and insecurity, illusory end-point of which is freedom and peace. In some ways, it may seem unsatisfactory to say that democracy is an "unfinished project" in which all still have a part to play. In the end, however, admitting this might the best guard against our own Palpatines, present and future.

Humanizing Technology: Flesh and Machine in Aristotle and The Empire
Strikes Back

JEROME DONNELLY

The philosopher Walter Benjamin (1892-1940) once remarked that in an age of technology the copy takes on greater importance than the original.

The Sony Corporation's mechanical dog created a sensation that illustrates

Benjamin's insight.

George Lucas's The Empire Strikes Back achieves its powerful effect in

a very special way, by making the mechanical and bionic world of science

fiction preferable to nature's flesh and blood. Lucas captivates his

audience by combining ultra-realism and familiarity with the content of its

predecessor, A New Hope. Together, these provide The Empire Strikes Back

with an unusually powerful appeal in drawing the viewer into Lucas's

strange new world. This compelling verisimilitude lends plausibility not

only to the film's action but also to its underlying themes, especially the

theme of humanizing technology, that is, treating the mechanical products

of technology as if they possessed life, a capacity for thought and

feeling, and rational and emotional interaction with people. In the course

of celebrating technology, Lucas develops an opposition between technology

and nature and, at crucial moments, ennobles technology at the expense of

nature. Because the theme operates so subtly in a film of otherwise

forceful, gripping plot and effects, analysis requires bringing the theme

to the surface in order to realize fully its meaning and implications.

The attitude expressed in The Empire Strikes Back represents a break

with the dominant philosophical tradition of Western culture, one with

roots in Aristotle and usually referred to as "philosophical realism." For

Aristotle, the natural universe is shot through with order, meaning, and

value. Nature is not only the principle of order and growth in the

universe; it is purposive and serves as a guide for human activity. Things

in the world are composed of matter, for example, the flesh, blood, and

bone of human beings, and form. Aristotle defines form as "that which makes

a thing what it is."

Form is what makes living things develop into what they become; acorns

develop into oak trees, and chicken eggs into chickens, all the while

transforming food and water into the different matter of wood, leaf,

feather, and flesh.2 Aristotle observes a hierarchy in nature, extending

from the inanimate through vegetable, animal, and human life. The vegetable

form (or soul) has the capacity for such activities as nutrition and

reproduction, while the animal soul adds to these powers with others, such

as locomotion and perception. Human beings combine these powers with the

greater powers of language and rational thought, and are thus at $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left$

of the natural hierarchy.

Artificial products, including technology, can complete "what nature

is unable to carry to a finish," but Aristotle insists on a basic

distinction between things that exist as part of the natural world and

those made by human skill, which include art and technology. Art can be

wonderful but is subordinate to nature, which is both prior to it and its

source. Aristotle's sharp distinction between the natural and the

artificial would apply to Luke Skywalker's bionic hand, since the limb is

produced from a pre-existing form and matter (or material). All manner of

products-clothes, ladders, glasses, prostheses-extend or enhance nature,

enabling human beings to keep warmer, reach higher, see better, or even

replace damaged or missing natural body parts.

"I Am Fluent in Six Million Forms of Communication"

In The Empire Strikes Back, Lucas implies that the world is mostly $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

artificial, a world made up simply of interchangeable parts, a view

reinforced by the constant tinkering and fixing of all the intergalactic

gadgets used in space travel. Nature is depicted as little more than a

nuisance, and technology is superior and necessary to repair the mess that

nature continually finds itself in, whether it is a lost limb or repeated $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right$

threats to the safety of the body and the potential extinction of life.

This is in sharp contrast to Aristotle's view of the relationship of art

(which would include technology) and nature. While everything in both art

and nature consists of form and matter, they do so in very different ways.

Aristotle emphasizes that nature works from within, while art and

technology are produced from outside, whether in making a statue with limbs

or prostheses to replace them. Art and technology fall outside of the order

of nature and aren't alive. Pygmalion, the ivory statue, which in Greek

legend was brought to life by the goddess of Love, is only a story. In the

real world, statues don't live or love; only people do. And anyone who fell

in love with a statue would be wasting both time and affection. Technology

is not only lifeless; it depends on nature as the basis of both its forms

and matter. In his Metaphysics, Aristotle uses the example of a bronze

sphere to make this point: "the production is from bronze [matter] and

sphere [form]-the form is imported [from outside the matter] into this

stuff and the result is a bronze sphere."4 In nature, form operates from

within matter, as, for example, an acorn grows from within to become an oak

tree. The difference is that between Sony's mechanical dog and a real dog.

C-3PO is a more sophisticated version of Sony's mechanical dog. Neither

grows from within; both are produced artificially from without.

The issue is not simply one of looking at modern technology with a $\ensuremath{\mathsf{new}}$

admiration. Both real and fictional heroes have famously felt affection for

the tools of their trade, admiring the beauty and craft of their weapons,

and occasionally speaking to sword or arrow in hoping aloud for victory or

a sure hit in the "Don't fail me now" tradition. Yet, when technology is

accorded the capacity to behave in human terms, the relationship between

man and tool changes considerably. The transformation is striking in The

Empire Strikes Back, as Lucas substitutes robots for some of the

traditional secondary adventure characters, and in so doing shifts audience

responses by directing affections away from human characters to these

ingenious (often cute) products of technology. The human emotion generated

on behalf of technology becomes accentuated by the absence of strong $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right$

feeling for what should be emotionally charged relationships. Despite the

inclusion of traditional adventures from epic and romance, along with a

budding love relationship between central characters Han Solo and Princess

Leia and the depiction of loyal bonds between comrades, the film repeatedly $\ensuremath{\mathsf{I}}$

deflects attention and feeling away from these human relationships,

particularly by constant deflation of the incipient love story.

Aristotle would take an entirely different approach to droids, clearly

distinguishing them from nature and people (who are at the apex of nature's $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right)$

hierarchy). He would classify R2-D2 or C-3P0 as "instruments of production.

" In the Politics, Aristotle seems to anticipate the likes of Empire's

futuristic robotics, imagining how an "instrument" (or robot) "could do its

own work, at the word of command or by intelligent $\$ anticipation $\$ like the

statues of Dedalus or the tripods made by Hephestus."5 Clearly, Aristotle

does not conceive of them as loveable creatures or like members of \boldsymbol{a}

family-something that Lucas is inclined to do.

Placing Empire's robots in familiar human roles radically alters the

nature of the audience experience by blurring the distinction between life

and technology. To illustrate the extent to which Lucas preserves the

experience of robots as characters, it's instructive to compare the

composition of his group to a set of counterparts in the $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right)$ film $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right)$ version of

The Wizard of Oz. The whining, worrying C-3PO is reminiscent of the

lachrymose Tin Woodsman, who himself has all the appearance of a robot; the

meddlesome R2-D2 sniffs out mischief like Dorothy's Toto; and, as if to

emphasize these similarities, Chewbacca the Wookiee has a mane and a

sentimental roar like the Cowardly Lion. And when C-3PO is shattered and

then put back together, it scolds its mender in just the exasperated tones

of the Scarecrow when Dorothy patiently replaces his straw.

The parallel points up important differences in the way the characters

appear to the audience; Frank Baum's story uses Dorothy's dream as

framework to distinguish fantasy from reality, as opposed to Lucas's

depiction of a science-fiction fantasy as real, even to the point of

eschewing the usual preliminary credits. Instead of framing off the

adventure as a fantasy, Lucas goes in the opposite direction by

obliterating the frame and drawing the audience into the film's ${\tt galaxy-}$

dodging meteorites that fly off the screen, ducking explosions from stereo

speakers surrounding them. However real the Tin Woodsman seems, he remains

framed off within a dream, one calculated as a reminder that the

relationship between Dorothy and her friends, however delightful, remains

clearly an imaginative experience from which Dorothy and the audience

awake. The Empire Strikes Back strives for the opposite effect, which gives

the robots and their human functions and relationships a strong sense of

validity-often at the expense of real humans and real human relationships.

"I Thought They Smelled Bad on the Outside"

in

This background of parallels only highlights the differences

attitude, and nowhere more clearly than in Lucas's theme of humanizing

technology. The theme builds gradually so that through the course of the

film the technological marvels—at first so vast and various in this strange $% \left(\frac{1}{2}\right) =\frac{1}{2}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right) +\frac{1}{2}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)$

new galaxy-seem finally as familiar and indispensable as the family car.

Indeed, Han and Chewbacca spend much of their time acting like mechanics

tinkering with spaceships as if they were jalopies parked in the driveway.

And, like real driveway mechanics, their grease-monkey antics often end in

comic frustration and failure.

The function of these comic moments is to give the $\mbox{ objects }$ of their

tinkering a sense of the familiar and the ordinary. In the film,

familiarization promotes acceptance of this futuristic technology, which

ushers in an actual humanizing of its products, achieved with spectacular

effect in R2-D2 and C-3PO. No longer simply handy pieces of technology,

they become more than robots; sometimes Mutt and Jeff comic figures,

sometimes endangered and unsuspecting children, they arouse feelings at one

moment of amused affection and at the next of concern. Apparently

programmed to meddle and fret, C-3PO engages the audience's emotions in the

very act of being an annoyance. It's as if technology has breathed the

breath of life into its products, and $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1$

distance, what appear to be approaching monsters turn out to be $\operatorname{AT-AT}$

walkers, the elephantine troop-transports of the Imperial army. Even their

destruction has a curious animal quality as they resist the $\ensuremath{\mathsf{most}}$

sophisticated rocket assault, only to be tripped up at their metal ankles

and fall heaving and shuddering on the ground.

With the AT-ATs, technology imitates nature; in the robots, technology evokes responses enabling it to replace the flesh and blood of organic

nature. Technology fills the vacuum created when real, living nature gets

dramatically shoved aside early in the film, in a scene in which $\mbox{\tt Han}$ Solo,

mounted on a tauntaun, rescues the wounded Luke Skywalker.

Realizing that without heat, they won't survive the $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

frozen waste, Han sacrifices his mount by slicing it open so that Luke can

use the creature's body heat by nestling in its opened guts. The sudden

unexpectedness of Han's slashing into the animal's flesh seems brutal, yet

the act is presented as necessary for survival and perfectly proper that

man sacrifice beast to save a human life. This attitude accords with

Aristotle's hierarchy of the natural order.

The incident offers a possibility for making a dramatic use of the

tradition of great steeds from classics to cowboys-from Alexander the

Great's historic Bucephalus to the Lone Ranger's fictional Silver. Such

horses are justly seen as objects of admiration, and their riders would be

saddened to lose them. Yet, Han expresses a curious lack of feeling toward

a living thing, and one that has served him without fail. His only response

is sarcasm as he slices open the animal's belly, remarking, "I thought they

smelled bad on the outside."

At this point, the film turns away from creaturely flesh to the

wonders of technology. How different is this view of animal flesh from that

of Aristotle, who acknowledges that "there are some animals which have no

attractiveness for the senses" and that "it is not possible without

considerable disgust to look upon the blood, flesh, bones, blood-vessels,

and suchlike," but who, nonetheless, encourages the study of all animal

life, "knowing that in not one of them is Nature or Beauty lacking."

"Luminous Beings Are We... Not This Crude Matter"

The disdain for creaturely flesh and blood illustrates a view that repeatedly crops up in Lucas's film: the display of an absence of value placed on physical life or on the goodness of nature, which is replaced by a predilection for technology.

Yoda, though separated from the technological action, speaks for many of the values expressed in the film, and his views give a clue to the for this preference. His initial, physically repugnant appearance soon becomes a kind of corroboration for his status as a guru. He has something of the Eastern mystic about him. His isolation appears to be a backdrop a life of ascetic contemplation, rather than a sign of alienated withdrawal. Yoda is seen finally as an embodiment of unselfish goodness thus a perfect mentor, under whose guidance Luke achieves a heightened consciousness. But there is something more to Yoda's isolation; he seems live in a world devoid of human emotion. Yoda warns Luke against the selfdestructiveness of hate, but nowhere does he advocate love. The fruit Yoda's training bears this out; though Luke shows loyalty (a quality he demonstrated before becoming Yoda's pupil), nowhere does he come to sort of compassionate insight one might expect from an enlightened mind.

Yoda's is a life without joy. World weary, perpetually exhausted, he takes no pleasure in reflecting that he has been training Jedi Knights for eight hundred years. Apparently, none of that has given any cause for celebration; he shows no inclination for song or delight in any form. His spirit of renunciation-"You must unlearn what you have learned"-implies a rejection of emotion and comes close to the sort of Buddhist injunction, "Give, sympathize, control," familiar to modern readers of T.S. Eliot's The Waste Land or in its more recent and pop-ular Zen manifestations.? Such an

implicitly dualistic attitude has closer affinities with the legacy of the

Puritan suspicion of life embodied in flesh, a view filtered through to the

modern world via American Transcendentalism, than it shares with the sense

of a unity of mind and body as well as the unity of being, as $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1$

Aristotle or in the work of J.R.R. Tolkien.

Aristotle takes a holistic approach in conceiving of the relation of

body and soul (or mind). In his philosophy, matter and form are $% \left(\frac{1}{2}\right) =\frac{1}{2}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right) +\frac{1}{2}\left(\frac$

indivisible, except for purposes of analysis. Unlike Plato, he doesn't

depreciate matter (or flesh) or denigrate it as a source of trouble or

pain. Instead, Aristotle argues that matter joined with form actualizes

being, and being is good. Aristotle would have no trouble answering the

question posed by an agonized Hamlet, "To be or not to be?" Without matter,

form cannot be individualized, that is, there can be no individual beings

without it, while matter without form doesn't even exist.

The same split between mind and matter in Lucas's film is a familiar $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right$

feature in much of the thinking about science going at least as far back as

Francis Bacon (1521-1626). Science and technology, in this post-Renaissance

view, emphasize discovery as a source of power oyer nature rather than as a

discovery of truths about nature anc[man's relation to the rest of the

universe. Seeking power over nature easily becomes a kind of combat, with

man pitting himself against the material universe. Yoda's teaching Luke to

levitate a rock while standing on one hand demonstrates more than training

in concentration; perhaps it even shows the same will to overcome matter

and gravity that appears in the modern impulse to balance $\ensuremath{\mathsf{massive}}$

skyscrapers on slender fingers of steel and concrete.

More importantly, it's in keeping with the spirit of nature as an obstacle to be overcome that the robots exhibit mind overcoming the limitations of flesh, and the comic re-building of C-3PO after having been blown apart by an enemy shot only dramatizes the implied insignificance of the relation of body to mind. In the same scene where C-3PO is reconstructed, the body becomes a series of interchangeable parts. Even as C-3PO comically scolds Chewbacca for getting its head on backwards, the

robot evokes pity, as if it were a human patient in an operating room.

Clearly lacking real flesh and life, lacking even that artificial life of a Frankenstein monster patched together from the flesh of unwitting donors, the robot has assumed a completely human role.8 Its dialogue with human characters and their paternalistic feelings toward the incessantly gabbing machine conspire to evoke smiles at one moment, pity and fear the next, and so confuse the human and the technological. Having taken the capacity for human interaction, R2-D2 and C-3PO operate like severed from organic bodies and installed in machines. As fleshly disappears, body is reduced to the status of an automobile-albeit capable of absorbing and processing data-whose parts are as interchangeable and as valuable as the springs on a car. Aristotle's inseparability of and mind disappears. Watching C-3PO's parts being tinkered with carries conviction that body no longer has any integral relation to thought, more than a car can be said to participate in the experience its driver having. Thus, separating mind and body, and rejecting the latter insignificant to humans and irrelevant to thought, blurs a distinction between humanity and technology and so advances the theme

humanizing technology, giving it plausibility it wouldn't otherwise have.

Similarly, humanizing technological puppets makes it easier to think

of human beings as something like robots with interchangeable parts. The

Empire Strikes Back develops this theme to such an extent that in the

closing moments when Luke's bionic hand replaces the real one he has lost

in battle, the new appendage appears not only identical with and equal to

the original, but even preferable to the flesh and blood hand. This bionic

hand, so the film suggests, can be replaced by any number of $\operatorname{similar}$

devices. Luke's expression of admiration as he flexes his new technological

fingers marks a triumph over nature. In contrast, Aristotle lavishes

several pages of his Parts of Animals to the wonders of natural, human

hands. He emphasizes elsewhere that just as a stick in the hand cannot be

the source of movement, neither does a hand move itself; instead, its

movement has its source and co-ordination in the soul. In The $\operatorname{\mathsf{Empire}}$

Strikes Back, flesh does not really matter, and the expression of revulsion

toward the stink of real flesh actually assists in encouraging a preference

for an odorless, mechanical substance. Nature does everything for the sake

of something, says Aristotle, for whom nature is the norm.? In $\,$ The $\,$ Empire $\,$

Strikes Back, that attitude is reversed. Technology exists not only as a

subject; technology becomes the norm.

While body parts can be replaced, that isn't true of the $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left$

Aristotle-and, indeed, for an entire tradition in Western philosophy that

includes Cicero, Thomas Aquinas, and their modern counterparts such as

Etienne Gilson, Peter Geach, and Henry Veatch-each person is unique.10 The

primary feature of the person is so obvious that a description of a person

might well overlook it: a person is unique and thus irreplaceable. The

basis for the individual self is in what Aristotle calls "primary

substance." Each person is thus like a fingerprint-unique to

individual in a world in which all individuals share in having

fingerprints. However many parts are interchangeable, persons, as persons,

are never interchangeable. Human beings share in a common nature; they

continue to beget and replace other human beings-all having in common their

humanity, as well as physical features like arms and legs. Yet, while limbs

can be lost (and artificially replaced), the uniqueness of the person $\dot{\cdot}$

remains.

Rejecting technology as a substitute for human norms and rejecting the $\,$

converse—that humans are the equivalent of machines or computers—doesn't

entail a rejection of the value of technology. The Empire Strikes Back

attacks the distinctiveness of human beings by encouraging a view of humans

in which the inseparability of mind and body no longer exists. Technology

is proffered instead as having the potential for becoming human. Where

popular culture has given us a Tin Woodsman who longed for a human heart.

technology has now given us a tin heart as a substitute, thus fulfilling

that dream in reverse. To regard technology as a contribution to human life

is one thing; to think of technology as the means of raising the status of

human nature is to repeat the mistake of Jonathan Swift's Lemuel Gulliver,

who returns from his last voyage having discovered a society of beings that

look like horses but display a rational understanding that far surpasses $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left$

anything that Gulliver has experienced in human company, and develops a

loathing for the human species. Totally misanthropic, he rejects his wife

and children and chooses the company of horses in the barn. A preference

for the products of technology must surely have the same result: an actual

demeaning of the truly human and a consequent rejection of the company of

people in exchange for the barn and the company of horses (or mechanical

 $\ensuremath{\mathsf{dogs}})$. The capacity for reasoning and feeling, for choosing and valuing, is

distinctly human. Insofar as it blinds us to this human distinctiveness,

humanizing technology ultimately results in dehumanization.

"A Certain Point of View": Lying Jedi, Honest Sith, and the Viewers
Who Love Them

SHANTI FADER

Not long after our second (or was it third?) viewing of Attack of the

Clones, my boyfriend and I became involved in one of our not-uncommon

debates about Lucas's galaxy in general and the Jedi in particular. As we

argued the finer points of Jedi philosophy and mindset, he commented,

"Isn't it interesting how the Jedi lie so much more than the Sith, and yet

they're supposed to be the good guys?"

Jedi enthusiast that I am, I automatically leaped to their defense-

only to be stopped by the realization that he was right. The Jedi do an

awful lot of lying and shading of the truth for a religious order that's

supposed to be on the side of virtue. Obi-Wan Kenobi lies to Luke about his

father; Yoda misleads Luke when he arrives on Dagobah; and Mace Windu

covers up the fact that the Jedi are losing their powers. By contrast, the $\,$

Sith do a surprising amount of truth-telling for villains. Count Dooku

tells a captive Obi-Wan flat-out that the Senate has been infil trated by a

Sith. Senator Palpatine, aka the Sith Master Darth Sidious, worms $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +$

into power without speaking a single literal untruth.1 And, of course, in

one of the most famous moments in Lucas's entire epic, Darth Vader tells

Luke the dev-astating truth that Obi-Wan had withheld.

The more I thought about it, the more it baffled me. Honesty is

generally seen as a virtue (except when someone asks you "Does this make me

look fat?"), and lying as a terrible, hurtful vice. Why, then, would Lucas

have his Jedi lie and his Sith tell the truth? As far back as Plato and

Socrates (fifth and fourth centuries B.C.), philosophers have been

wrestling with the puzzle of truth and falsehood, in the process coming up

with a varied and fascinating array of ideas. I certainly don't pretend to

have the answer to what truth really is, but in this chapter $\mbox{I'll}$ explore

several possibilities raised by philosophers and reflected in Lucas's $\,$

intriguing paradox.

Just the Facts

The search for truth is as old as the first human being who wondered about the meaning of existence, and as modern as the movies playing in today's multiplex. One of the primary purposes of mythology and religion is to seek the truth about our purpose in this life. "What is truth?" Pontius Pilate famously asked Jesus-and philosophy itself might be seen as

endless search for an answer to that question.

make these statements, what I say is true.

But what, exactly, is truth? On the simplest and most literal level, truth is what corresponds to the facts-to be true, a statement has to correctly represent the way things really are. I can say, "The ticket line for The Phantom Menace stretched all the way around the block." This statement is true if the ticket line did stretch all the way around the block, and false if I'm exaggerating due to my sore feet. George Lucas envisioned the Star Wars movies, Carrie Fisher played Princess Leia, and John Williams wrote the score: these are all facts and therefore when T

But is truth really this simple? I believe there's far more to it.

Factual truth is certainly necessary for a society to function. Merchants

and craftspeople need to represent their products accurately if they want

to keep their customers. No legal system can function without factual

honesty-witnesses in court swear to tell "the truth, the whole truth, and

nothing but the truth," and are punished if caught in $\,$ a lie. On $\,$ a more

personal level, trust is one of the most important ingredients of relationships.

But telling the truth isn't as easy as simply reporting facts, as anyone who's had to deal with an opinionated boss, an insecure friend, or nosy in-laws can confirm. People lie for many reasons: to make themselves look better, avoid blame for something they've done, protect a loved one who's fallen afoul of the law, or gain something they can't (or won't try to) get through honest means, among others. This is particularly true when a society's leaders fail their people or commit a wrongful act. Those holding power are usually unwilling to relinquish it, and seldom hesitate

to cover up their error. This drama manifests in Star Wars as the decline

and fall of the Old Republic-era Jedi Order.

In Attack of the Clones, the Jedi have found themselves in a terribly $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left($

awkward position: they're losing their connection to the Force. The Jedi

are peacekeepers, an order of religious knights not unlike the Templars of

European history or the Round Table of Arthurian legend, and if it became

known that their powers were fading, they would also lose the awe and

respect previously accorded them. (That the Jedi are indeed viewed this way

is established by the Trade Federation officials' reaction to $\,$ Obi-Wan and

Qui-Gon Jinn in The Phantom Menace?) In order to carry out their duties as

the "guardians of peace and justice," they feel they're forced (no pun

intended) to break their own moral code. How long the Jedi would've been

able to maintain this pretence is uncertain; the illusion of power seldom

lasts very long with nothing to back it up. Later, we'll examine whether or

not this deception is justified; but it's unquestionably a lie in the

simplest and most straightforward sense.

Then there are the Sith. The German philosopher Friedrich Nietzsche

(1844-1900), who was very interested in both truh and power, and enjoyed

questioning traditional morality, could easily have had Palpatine in mind

when he wrote:

The intellect... unfolds its chief powers in simulation; for this is

the means by which the weaker, less robust individuals preserve themselves.

.. In man this art of simulation reaches its peak: here deception,

flattery, lying and cheating, talking behind the back, posing, living in

borrowed splendor, being masked, the disguise of convention, acting a role

before others and before one self-in short, the constant $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left$

the single flame of vanity is so much the role $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

nothing is more incomprehensible than how an honest and pure urge for $\ensuremath{\operatorname{truth}}$

could make its appearance among men.

Here we begin to see that truth is not so simple. While Palpatine for

the most part doesn't tell direct falsehoods, his words are always layered

with hidden meanings, most of them for the benefit of the audience members

who know exactly what he's really after. (So much of what Palpatine says in

Episodes I and II seems directed at the audience, rather than his fellow

characters, that I'm tempted to suspect that his Sith $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1$

knowledge that he's fictional and the ability to read ahead in the script!)

The best example of this, interestingly, is his acceptance speech upon

being granted "emergency powers" by the Senate in Attack of the Clonesthe

very speech that appears to be his most blatant lie.

"I love democracy," Palpatine proclaims. Of course he loves it!

Democracy is the tool that granted him a smooth and bloodless rise to

absolute power. Just because he discards the tool when it's no longer

necessary doesn't mean it didn't please him while he was using it. As for

his pledge to lay his power down once the crisis was resolved, clearly

Palpatine wasn't thinking of the same crisis as the rest of the Senate. As

late as Return of the fedi, Palpatine (now the Emperor) still sees threats

to his power and to the Empire he rules. If he doesn't consider

"crisis" resolved, he's being true to the letter of his speech; and if

Senate heard something other than what Palpatine secretly believed, we in

the audience know better. Like Obi-Wan, Palpatine lied only "from a certain

point of view."

"Judge Me by My Size, Do You?"

One of the pleasures I took from $\,$ my $\,$ first $\,$ viewing of Tbe $\,$ Phantom

Menace was hearing scattered horrified gasps from the audience when Oueen

Amidala first addresses that helpful, gray-haired man as "Palpatine." The

kindly Senator is a facade designed to deflect suspicion away from himself

while he maneuvers everyone around him (including the Jedi, who really

should've known better) into liking him, trusting him, and giving him

exactly what he wants. Palpatine takes control of the Senate without

personally spilling a single drop of blood because he conceals the

that he's really a ruthless, power-hungry, and vengeance-seeking Sith

Master. The few times we see him as Darth Sidious, his face is hidden

beneath a heavy hood.

Then there's Yoda. When we first meet him neither Luke nor the

audience has any idea that this comical, wizened little chatterbox could be

the great Jedi Master whom Luke was sent to find. Yoda doesn't reveal his

identity, but keeps up the game until Luke figures it out on his own. How

is this any different from Palpatine's actions?

The difference can be found not in what the two characters $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

but in why-in the intention behind their actions (and of course, their

ultimate consequences). The reasons behind a person's actions can be every

bit as important as the actions themselves. And while many philosophers,

such as Immanuel Kant (1724-1804), would say that lying is never

defensible, others, including utilitarians, believe that there are times

when lies are harmless or even beneficial, that is, when they would produce

the greatest good for the greatest number of people. Nietzsche goes even

further, dismissing conventional morality altogether and declaring that

truth is nothing but the specific set of lies accepted by a particular society.

Turning briefly away from Palpatine and Yoda, we can now look at the

Jedi Council's decision to conceal the waning of their powers and ask: what

was their intention? They may have honestly thought their lie served the

greater good, letting them continue to act as peacekeepers and negotiators.

Certainly the galaxy becomes a harsher place once the Jedi are eradicated

or forced into hiding. In the end, though, however altruistic their

intentions might have been, the Jedi certainly appeared to be lying to $\ensuremath{\mathsf{hold}}$

onto power.

Palpatine's intentions have no such shades of grey about them. He wants to take over the Senate, overthrow the Jedi, and make himself the single, supreme ruler of the entire galaxy; he wants power for its own sake and uses deception to gain it.

Yoda, on the other hand, doesn't deceive Luke for power or personal gain (with the possible exception of Luke's flashlight, with which stubbornly refuses to part). His motives are similar to those of Tibetan Lama Marpa the Translator, who misled and toyed with his wouldstudent Milarepa for years-demanding near-impossible physical labor repeatedly refusing to give him instruction or initiations-before finally relenting and taking on the incredibly patient youth.4 A more modern example would be the old karate master Mr. Miyagi from The Karate Kid, commands his baffled student Daniel-san to perform endless chores before revealing that they were actually cleverly disguised lessons (with the benefit of giving Mr. Miyagi a clean house and shiny cars). To understand Yoda, we need to realize that he like Marpa and Mr. Miyaqi, is playing the Trickster.

Tricksters are found in myth and story throughout the world. They're usually wise and powerful beneath a playful or even foolish exterior. Tricksters disquise themselves and play pranks in order to test people, disrupt their preconceptions, or jolt them into a new way of thinking. Yoda's behavior tested Luke, exposing the young man's impatience, impulsiveness, and incomplete understanding of the Forcefaults which Luke would've tried to hide, consciously or not, if he'd known he was facing a Jedi Master.

Yoda's primary lesson is that in order to use the Force, one must look beyond appearances. Palpatine embodies the negative side of this lesson, with his kindly face and hidden lust for power. Yoda, powerful and enlightened beyond what his wizened exterior would suggest, embodies the positive.

Truth and the Marketplace

Truth, then, is less obvious than it initially seems. People aren't always what they appear, and words that sound honest can be colored hidden meanings. But this hardly explains or solves the paradox of lying Jedi and honest Sith, particularly not in the case of Obi-Wan Kenobi, whom we first meet as a wise desert hermit and mentor figure. would such a person lie to Luke? From one perspective, this is a terrible act-a betrayal of young Luke's trust, a way to manipulate him into joining battle on the Jedi's team. When Obi-Wan's lie is exposed, Luke is shattered to the point of very nearly choosing death. But from another perspective, Obi-Wan wasn't trying to manipulate Luke, but to protect him.

"You can't handle the truth!" Jack Nicholson shouts at the climax of Α Few Good Men. Not all truths are pretty or easy to face. And just as forms of entertainment are too intense for young children, some truths simply too much to handle for people at an early stage in their emotional and intellectual development. The Greek philosopher Socrates (470-399 B.C.) compares the seeking of truth to shopping in inexperienced shopper, who can't tell good merchandise from bad, find herself swindled into buying food that's spoiled, unwholesome, poisoned-or, like Luke's Uncle Owen, buying a droid with a bad motivator.6 Nietzsche makes the uncomfortable point that we only actually want truths

that are pleasant or that help us, and we're quite tolerant of lies that do us no harm.

The Luke that Obi-Wan meets on Tatooine is young and sheltered.

He knows nothing more complex than his aunt and uncle's farm, and sees the Jedi as perfect, shining heroes out of legend, not real people with frailties and human weakness. Obi-Wan feels that this Luke isn't ready for the ugly truth about his father. As Socrates would put it, he doesn't

yet

have the wisdom to keep that knowledge from poisoning him. Most likely, if

Luke hadn't rushed off to face Vader half-trained, he would've eventually

learned the complete story in a gentler way. But for the time being, Obi-

Wan offers the young Jedi a version of the truth that he could handle.

"Unexpected This Is, and Unfortunate"

If Obi-Wan uses a lie to protect, the Sith $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

Vader tells Luke the truth about his parentage at the worst possible time,

and in a way that inflicts as much pain as humanly possible: truth without

compassion is brutality. In Attack of the Clones, Yoda's renegade

apprentice Count Dooku picks a similarly bad situation in which to tell

young Obi-Wan that a Sith has infiltrated the Senate. Dooku even echoes

Vader's dialogue as he invites the Jedi to join him, knowing that he'll

either be believed and gain an ally, or disbelieved, in which case telling

the truth actually covers it up.

Neither Vader nor Dooku is telling the truth because he wants to increase anyone's knowledge or understanding, or lead them toward a more authentic life. Instead, they both use truth in an attempt to break a Jedi's faith in something they know and trust-in Obi-Wan's case, the

Senate, and in Luke's case, Obi-Wan himself-and in doing so to make them

question their loyalty. This, of course, works better in the case of the

vulnerable, half-trained Luke. Despite his initial words of disbelief, Obi-

Wan passes Dooku's information on to the Jedi Council (where it's largely

dismissed). But even Luke doesn't give in entirely. Though shattered in

body and spirit, he lets himself drop into the abyss below Cloud City

rather than join Vader.

Later, Luke returns to Dagobah, where Vader's story is reluctantly

confirmed first by a dying Yoda, then by the spirit of Obi-Wan in a

dialogue that raises the question: was Obi-Wan's lie really a lie at all?

In a strictly literal sense it is-Darth Vader can't have killed Luke's

father if he is Luke's father. But as we've seen in this chapter, truth is

seldom as simple as the literal facts make it seem.

Obi-Wan says, "Luke, you're going to find that many of the truths we

cling to depend greatly on our own point of view." This isn't necessarily

the evasive self-justification it appears to be. It could certainly be

argued, as Obi-Wan does, that the good man and Jedi who was Anakin

Skywalker was destroyed when he chose the path of the Sith and became Darth

Vader. Vader says as much when Luke calls him Anakin: "That name no longer

has any meaning for me." To which Luke responds, "It is the name of your

true self. You've only forgotten." Changing one's name is a near-universal

way to signal a new identity, dying in a metaphorical sense to one's old

self and being reborn. There's no denying, however, that Obi-Wan didn't

originally intend Luke to understand his words in this metaphysical sense- $\!\!\!$

any more than Palpatine expected the Senate to see through the layers of

meaning in his acceptance speech. That intention makes it a deception even

if truth was buried in his words. It also brings the virtuous $\,\,$ Jedi Knight

uncomfortably close to the wicked Sith Master, one of the shadings into

grey of previously one-sided characters that helps make the Star Wars films

so interesting.

The question of whether or not Obi-Wan really lied is $\ensuremath{\,\,\mathrm{less}}$ important

than why he said what he said-his intentions. A parallel can be found in

the Parable of the House on Fire, which the Buddha tells to his disciple

Shariputra. A wealthy man's house catches on fire. His children are

oblivious to the fire and the danger it poses. They ignore their father's $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right$

warnings and continue to play with their toys as the house burns around

them. The father finally tells his children he's got wonderful carts

outside for them, carts driven by each of their favorite animals.

Delighted, the children run outside. The promised carts are not there, but

in their place are carriages that carry them safely away from the fire.

Buddha then asks his disciple whether or not the father in the $\,$ parable is

guilty of falsehood. Shariputra says no:

The elder is not guilty of falsehood, for he has only enabled his

children to avoid the calamity of fire, and has thereby saved their lives..

. If that elder had not given them even so much as a single small cart, he

still would not have been speaking falsely. Why? Because the elder

previously had this thought, "I shall use expedients to lead my children out."

So when deception is used to attain noble ends, to assist someone

whose awareness and understanding are incomplete, it isn't really

deception. This is surprising, coming as it does from the Buddhist

tradition in which one of the basic tenets is "right speech," which

includes honesty. Perhaps Shariputra overstates his case and the elder has

indeed told a falsehood, but nevertheless is not "guilty" as no $\$ one would

argue that lying to save an oblivious child from death is wrong.

Obi-Wan's intentions are very much the same as those of the $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

the parable. He sees Luke in danger of falling into a life in which his

spiritual potential will be squandered or corrupted, or quite possibly even

losing that life before it had really begun. He sees as well that Luke is

blind to that danger, so he uses "expedients" to lead the young man toward

a more authentic life. Plato touches on a similar idea when he relates the

story of Socrates and the "Noble Lie."10 Socrates is faced with the task of

explaining to the people of his hypothetical Republic why they've been

divided into social classes of craftspeople, guardians, and leaders. To

convince them, he invents a fantastic tale of their having been formed,

educated, and nurtured within the earth along with their weapons and tools,

and that precious metals have been mixed into them-metals that $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right) +\left($

man for one specific task in life. Socrates himself acknowledges that this

is a falsehood, and seems reluctant to have told it:

Glaucon: It isn't for nothing that you were so shy about telling your falsehood.

Socrates: Appropriately so.

Nevertheless, he feels, as Obi-Wan did, that it was a lie necessary

for the greater good of his students. If reality fell short of Obi-Wan's $\parbox{\footnote{A}}$

hopes, it's as much the fault of the impatient student as of the teacher's lie.

"Trust Your Feelings"

Truth can also mean a spiritual understanding and awareness that's not provable by cold, hard facts. In Indiana Jones and the Last Crusade,
Harrison Ford's Dr. Jones draws a sharp line between the two when he tells
a classful of adoring students that archeology is "the search for facts.
Not truth." He then directs any students who are after truth to a philosophy class down the hall. Obi-Wan's "certain point of view" comment
may sound like a. bald-faced attempt to cover his former lie; Luke certainly seems to think so. It is, however, an important reminder not to cling too blindly to a literal, mechanistic truth.

According to Joseph Campbell, a mythologist who influenced Lucas, one of the central conflicts in Star Wars is that of man versus machine.11 The Empire, with its bland uniforms, faceless white-armored stormtroopers, a Sith Lord who's half-robot, and of course the "technological terror" of the Death Star, represents a loss of humanity and with it the ability to see truth from any perspective other than their own-a cold, mechanistic, power-driven perspective that sees no truth beyond bare facts.12 Machines can't see shades of meaning and are incapable of intuitive understanding; everything is black or white, right or wrong. Furthermore, by refusing to acknowledge the viewpoints of anyone but themselves, the Empire renders outsiders less than human, mere things to be exploited and conquered.

This is why the Sith are no better for their honesty. Not only is their version of truth a narrow, limited one, but they speak it only to serve their own purposes. Truth-telling for the Sith has nothing to do with increasing wisdom and understanding; it's just another tool to help them gain power or hurt their opponents. Ironically, in speaking more literal, factual truths, they lose the higher spirit of truth-that integrity that

comes when honesty is practiced for the sake of illuminating the λ

soul. The Jedi try to hold this integrity. When they fail, valuing power

above honor, they fall from grace and are nearly eradicated. Yoda tells

Luke, "A Jedi uses the Force for knowledge and defense, never for attack," $\$

and the same could be said about truth. Even if the intention toward a

higher truth sometimes fails (as it did in the case of Obi-Wan and even

more so in the Old Republic Jedi), it still serves a different and more $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left$

noble end. Vader's truth brings Luke nothing but darkness; the same truth,

from Yoda and Obi-Wan, brings understanding and compassion.

Luke is finally the one who must sort out these layers of truth and deceit. In Return of the Jedi, he rejects both versions of who and what his

more compassionate than either Vader's or Obi-Wan's truth.

The symbol of the lightsaber helps illuminate this idea. Lightsabers

are one of the most striking and memorable images to come out of the Star

Wars films. Obi-Wan describes them as "the weapon of a Jedi Knight."

"not as clumsy or as random as a blaster," and "an elegant weapon for $\ensuremath{\text{^{1}}}$

a more civilized age." They're futuristic high-tech swords, and the sword

has long been a symbol of truth-the weapon of knights and samurai, in many

cases a physical manifestation of their honor. In the Tarot, the Suite of

Swords represents knowledge and the intellect, and the $\,$ Ace $\,$ of $\,$ Swords in

particular is often interpreted or even depicted outright as a blade of

truth cutting through layers of deception, and confusion. "The Battle Hymn

of the Republic" speaks of "His terrible swift sword... His truth is

marching on." Like truth, a sword can be used for good or evil, to protect

or harm. The only difference between a Jedi's lightsaber and that of a Sith

is the blade color.

In A New Hope, Luke is given his father's old blue-bladed lightsaber;

he accepts it as willingly and unquestioningly as he accepts Obi-Wan's

story. In The Empire Strikes Back, Vader slices off the hand holding that

blade, an action as harsh and brutal as the truth he then speaks. Instead

of joining Vader and constructing a new lightsaber under his instruction,

Luke chooses to build one on his own and (presumably) without instruction.

Luke's choice of a green blade (representing life and growth), rather than

a red blade as the Sith all use (representing blood and death), is

certainly not accidental.

Later, Luke confronts the spirit of Obi-Wan, who finally tells him the

full story behind Anakin Skywalker's fall and transformation.

Interestingly, Luke's response (once past his initial bitterness) is to

insist that there's good left in Vader. Obi-Wan disagrees: "He's more

machine now than man. Twisted and evil." But Luke is through with accepting $\,$

the words of others unquestioningly. Obi-Wan and Vader have given him only

part of the story. The rest comes from his own intuition, the "feelings"

that Jedi are told to trust above everything else.

This is the truth of the heart, a truth beyond mechanistic facts or

even shades of meaning, the final step in the path Luke chose when he

turned off his targeting computer on the Death Star run. Luke seeks to

build his own truth, trusting what he feels above what anyone tells him,

and as a symbol of this truth he builds and wields his own lightsaber. For

this reason, he alone is able to move beyond words, appearances, and the

dizzying kaleidoscope of individual perspectives. He $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right$

spark of Anakin Skywalker flickering within the mechanical shell of Darth

Vader, but redeems him and thereby helps bring down the Empire and the Sith

against all expectations. In doing so, he redeems the fallen honor of the

Old Republic Jedi and restores their truth to what it should have been.

Philosophers in this galaxy have been debating the $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

truth is from "a long time ago" to this day, and if history is any

indication, they aren't likely to agree on it anytime soon. But at least we

finally have an answer to the question of the lying Jedi: they lie because

truth isn't simple, and because they know that truth told without

compassion can be brutal. Claiming that truth should always be told,

regardless of other ethical considerations, is like claiming that there's

nothing left of Darth Vader to be redeemed-true on only the most.

superficial level. Fans may not like to see their heroes as less than

honorable, but the lesson of the lying Jedi is that truth depends on $\ensuremath{\mathsf{o}}$

perspective, on intention, on intuitive understanding, and finally on a

compassion that's willing to see the whole picture and not $\,$ just $\,$ a single $\,$

"point of view."

Religious Pragmatism through the Eyes of Luke Skywalker

JOSEPH W. LONG

In a memorable scene from A New Hope, a skeptical Han Solo tells the $\,$

idealistic Luke Skywalker, "Kid, I've flown from one side of this galaxy to

the other. I've seen a lot of strange stuff, but I've never $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

to make me believe there's one all-powerful Force controlling everything."

Nevertheless, Luke becomes a hero because of his faith in his friends, his

father, and most importantly, the Force, a mystical energy field in which

he believes but which he cannot empirically verify.

The question of when to believe something and when not to believe is very important in the Star Wars galaxy and in our own. In fact, this is one of the central questions in the crucial branch of philosophy known as epistemology, the study of the theory of knowledge. Epistemology is important to all of us because clearly some things should be believed and others not. It seems, for example, somehow right to believe in the existence of black holes and wrong to believe in the existence of unicorns.

In this chapter, we'll explore the important matter of "when to believe" by first looking at the skeptical position of the nineteenthcentury philosopher William Clifford, and then putting this position to test with the help of arguments from the famous pragmatist philosopher William James. A pragmatist is a person who is committed to a practical human view of the world and of epistemology. Pragmatists like James that in addition to reasons that show the truth of what we believe, are also practical reasons to believe in something. We'll call the former reasons truth-conducive and the latter pragmatic. We'll see that William James's position, that a pragmatic faith belief can be a positive thing, indeed our salvation, is exemplified well by Luke Skywalker.

"A Lot of Simple Tricks and Nonsense"

In his 1874 article, "The Ethics of Belief,"1 William Clifford tells us that faith is "wrong always, everywhere, and for anyone."2 It's easy to see how one could maintain that faith, or believing upon insufficient evidence, is wrong in an epistemic sense (that it may not lead to knowing a truth); but Clifford believes it is also morally wrong. To explain why he thinks faith is immoral, Clifford tells us this story: A shipowner is about

to send a ship full of immigrants to the new land. The shipowner is warned

that the ship is old and weathered and not overly well built at the start,

and may not make the long journey. Although he could have the ship

inspected and repaired if necessary, the shipowner decides to trust in

Providence. "It has made many voyages," he reasons. "Surely, it will make

this one also." Ultimately, the ship sinks and the immigrants all perish.

Now, we can see why Clifford believes faith is morally wrong. It can lead

to disastrous consequences. But what if the ship had made it to the new

land successfully? In that case too, says Clifford, the shipowner would be

guilty, "because he had no right to believe on such evidence as was before $% \left(\frac{1}{2}\right) =\frac{1}{2}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right) +\frac{1}{2}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right) +$

him."

When Luke turns off the targeting computer of his X-wing fighter and "uses the Force" to blow up the Death Star, he is guilty of the sin of faith. What makes holding a belief immoral is not simply a matter of whether that belief is true or false, or even whether it is fruitful or unfruitful, but rather of how it originated. The danger of faith is

not only that we might have a false belief or even that we should pass on

false belief to others, although this is bad enough. Still worse, if we

should be in the habit of not seeking justification for our beliefs, we may

become overly credulous and thus, savage, like the barbarous ${\tt Sand}$ People of

Tatooine.

Han Solo, at least the Han that we meet at the beginning of A New Hope, seems to be a skeptic like Clifford. Although he congratulates Luke $\frac{1}{2}$

on blowing up the Death Star, we can imagine how vexed he would have been

if he were privy to Luke's unorthodox method. He believes the Force is

nothing but "a lot of simple tricks and nonsense," and "no match for a $\ensuremath{\mathsf{good}}$

blaster at your side." We've all known people who adhere blindly to what

they were taught as a child, never exposing themselves to experiences which

might make them doubt. Clifford tells us that the life of such a person "is

one long sin against mankind, "4 and I believe he has a good point. We'd

hardly respect Luke if he had refused to enter the cave on Dagobah where he

faced his doubts and the knowledge of the Dark Side within himself.

does this mean that faith is always wrong?

"I Find Your Lack of Faith Disturbing"

Of course, faith is not always advisable. In The Empire Strikes Back,

Luke has unwarranted faith in his abilities as a Jedi and foolishly leaves

his training with Yoda to try to help his friends. This faith backfires and

costs him dearly, as he loses his hand in an imprudent showdown with Darth

Vader. But under certain conditions, William James argues that faith can be

not only morally permissible, but even salvific or hero-making. Luke

Skywalker's actions ultimately help demonstrate this. James $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) +\left(1\right)$

importance of hero-making faith in "Ethical Importance of the Phenomenon of $\frac{1}{2}$ ".

Effort":

The world thus finds in the heroic man its worthy match and mate;

the effort which he is able to put forth to hold himself erect and keep his

heart unshaken is the direct measure of his worth and function in the game

of human life. He can stand this Universe. He can meet it and keep up his

faith in it in presence of those same features which lay his weaker

brethren low. He can still find a zest in it, not by "ostrich-like

forgetfulness," but by pure inward willingness to face it with these

deterrent objects there. And hereby he makes himself one of the masters and

lords of life. He must be counted with henceforth; he forms a part of human

destiny. Neither in the theoretic nor in the practical sphere do we care

for, or go for help to, those who have no head for risks, or sense for

living on the perilous edge... But just as our courage is so often a reflex

of another's courage, so our faith is apt to be a faith in some one else's

faith. We draw new life from the heroic example.

What are these conditions that must obtain for faith to be morally

acceptable? First, it is acceptable to have faith only when the choice is

intellectually undecidable. If a little bit of thinking could decide the

issue one way or the other then we cannot simply choose to have faith.

Also, the decision in question must constitute a genuine option. A genuine

option is a choice which is living, forced, and momentous. A living option

is one where there exist at least two real possibilities that may be chosen

between. As a teen, Luke had few live career options. Perhaps he could be a

moisture farmer like his Uncle Owen. Perhaps he could go off to the

Imperial Academy next season after the harvest. But before meeting $\mbox{\sc Obi-Wan}$

Kenobi, being a Jedi Knight was not a real live possibility. It became a

live possibility only after Obi-Wan told Luke about his father and after

his aunt and uncle were killed by Imperial stormtroopers. Likewise,

Solo's live choices are to be a mercenary or a smuggler before his

adventures with Luke and Leia. Only later could he realistically choose to

be an officer of the Rebel Alliance. In addition to being live, a genuine

option must be forced. A forced option is one where a decision must be

made, or where choosing not to decide amounts to choosing one way or the

other. Luke and Leia's decision to swing across the retracted bridge on the

Death Star in A New Hope was a forced option. Choosing not to decide would

be identical to choosing death (or at least surrender.) Finally, a genuine

option must be momentous. That is, it must be important and unique.

Deciding to go to the grocery store to buy paper towels is \mbox{not} momentous.

Nothing very important hinges upon the decision and the decision could be

made again at any time in the future. Obi-Wan's decision to respond to ${\sf R2-}$

D2's message from Princess Leia, however, is momentous. A great deal hangs

upon it and a decision must be made immediately for as Leia pleads, "You're

my only hope."

Luke's decision to have faith in the Force seems to fit all of James's

criteria. It seems clearly intellectually undecidable. How could Luke

empirically test the power of the Force?6 One must believe in the Force in

order to act through it. Thus, he could hardly have the scientific

skepticism necessary to set up an appropriate experiment and still control

the Force. His decision is living. Either believing or not believing is a

real possibility. The choice is forced. If he chooses not to decide, then

for all practical purposes, he has chosen against putting his faith in the

Force. And finally, it is momentous. Trusting in the Force opens $\mbox{ for }$ Luke

unique and important opportunities. So, does this prove that Luke's faith

in the Force is advantageous? Not yet, it seems. First, we must show that

the advantage Luke could gain by believing a truth is greater than the $\,$

disadvantage he could have by believing a falsehood.

"I Don't Believe It"... "That Is why You Fail"

 $\ensuremath{\mathsf{James}}$ and $\ensuremath{\mathsf{Clifford}}$ agree that believing truths and avoiding falsehoods

are our "first and great commandments as would be knowers;"? but these are

two different things. For instance, one could avoid error by believing

nothing, but it seems clear there is value in believing some things, $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right$

particularly true things. So which is more important, or does each have

same worth? Clifford stresses the avoidance of error, but it seems to me that James is correct when he says that believing what's true is equally or even more important than weeding out false beliefs.

Furthermore, some truths cannot be realized without faith. In The Empire Strikes Back, when even Han has become a bit of a believer, he intentionally flies the Millennium Falcon into an asteroid field to lose the Imperial TIE fighters chasing him. Han's belief in his ability as a pilot despite great odds (3,720 to one against, by C-3PO's calculations) helps create the fact of his (and his crew's) survival. By choosing to believe in spite of a lack of justification, Han may actually help create a truth, the truth of his survival. And this; hardly seems morally wrong.

In some cases, it seems we can create truths through our beliefs. Take the often heard story of a man confronted by dangerous criminals in a alley. Instead of running from the criminals or fighting them, which would be futile, the man appeals to the good in the criminals, treats them as they were loving people. And by treating the criminals as if they loving despite better evidence, the criminals are made loving. This perhaps what happens when Luke confronts Darth Vader on the second Death Star at the end of Return of the Jedi. The Emperor, meanwhile, tells that his faith in his friends is his weakness. But Luke's faith proves be his saving grace. After Luke surrenders on Endor, he reminds his there is still good in him, that he is still Anakin Skywalker. He this with no justification, only faith, for Obi-Wan has told him Vader lost: "He's more machine now than man, twisted and evil." Eventually, Luke's faith saves him, as Vader kills the Emperor before the Emperor

destroy Luke. But Luke's faith is not only beneficial for himself. It

also

saves his father, for his faith turns Anakin back to the Light Side of the

Force before he dies. It thus seems that there are certain circumstances

under which it is not only morally acceptable to have faith (to believe

without sufficient evidence), but it can also be salvific for $\$ oneself and

perhaps even for others.

"A New Hope"

Faith is an important element of the Star Wars galaxy, but it is also

important in our own. As a college teacher, I have learned the value of

faith in the classroom. Before meeting a new class, I have no good evidence

about whether my students will be good students or bad students. By "good"

I mean intellectually honest critical truth seekers who are enthusiastic

about philosophy. In fact, one could argue that I have inductive or

circumstantial evidence that at least some of my students will not be good.

After all, in the past I always have had some students that lack enthusiasm $\ \ \,$

or honesty or are not committed to finding truth. Nevertheless, when I walk

into a new class, I choose to believe that all of my students are good

students and I treat them as such. Although I could be wrong, I believe

that my decision to believe in the goodness of $\ensuremath{\mathsf{my}}$ students helps bring

about the virtues of enthusiasm and honesty and commitment to truth in

them. My reasons for believing in the goodness of my students is not

"truth-conducive," that is, I don't hold this belief based on good

evidence. Rather, as a pragmatist, I believe that there are practical

reasons why one might be justified in believing something. For $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right)$

believe in the goodness of $my\ students$ because I think some good will come

of it and no harm will be done.

Yoda and Obi-Wan lack good evidence that Luke can become a Jedi and

vanquish the Emperor and Vader. In fact, they have good reason to doubt

Luke's success because of Anakin's failure. Like Anakin, Luke is "too old

to begin the training," lacks patience, and has "much anger in him."

Clifford would agree with Yoda's initial reluctance to train Luke.8 James,

however, would recognize the potential for a great good that could come

from doing so. And as we all know, James's pragmatic faith wins out in the end.

A better example of pragmatic thinking from our own galaxy can be

found in Reverend Martin Luther King, Jr.'s famous "I Have a Dream" speech.

In spite of a lack of truth-conducive evidence and in opposition to the

prevailing social conservatism, Reverend King chose to believe that his

dream of whites and blacks standing hand in hand as equals could $\,$ become $\,$ a

real possibility. Although the struggle is not yet complete, his dream

seems to be coming true in twenty-first-century America, and this could not

have happened without his faith and the faith of others like him. Because

of this faith, we are in a better world today. The example of Reverend King

demonstrates how faith can allow us to find a good and a truth outside of

ourselves and give us all "a new hope."